



I See...

Arise!

Douglas H. Mendenhall

I See...

Arise!

Joseph Smith said, “Knowledge saves a man; and in the world of spirits no man can be exalted but by knowledge.” (TPJS, p. 357)

“When you climb up a ladder, you must begin at the bottom, and ascend step by step, until you arrive at the top; and so it is with the principles of the Gospel—you must begin with the first, and go on until you learn all the principles of exaltation. But it will be a great while after you have passed through the veil before you will have learned them. It’s not all to be comprehended in this world; it will be a great work to learn our salvation and exaltation even beyond the grave.” (TPJS, p. 348)

Douglas H. Mendenhall

Copyright © 2016 by Douglas H. Mendenhall

All rights reserved under International and Pan-American Copyright Conventions.

No part of this book may be used or reproduced in any manner whatsoever without written permission except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical articles and reviews.

For information address the author at:
PO Box 282, Mt Pleasant UT 84647

Published in the United States by
Publishing Hope
PO Box 282, Mt. Pleasant, UT 84647

Printed in the United States of America

First Edition

Cover painting by Rebecca Wagstaff
Book design by Bryan Haslam

CONTENTS

v		PREFACE
1	Chapter 1	NUMBERS
3	Chapter 2	HEAVEN TOOK NOTICE
13	Chapter 3	ANOTHER CHANCE
21	Chapter 4	EARTHBOUNDED
29	Chapter 5	SPOON BENDING?
45	Chapter 6	ENERGY WORK
67	Chapter 7	ENERGY, CHAKRAS AND MEDITATION
99	Chapter 8	KUNDALINI?
111	Chapter 9	AWAKENING THE THIRD EYE
131	Chapter 10	ONE WHOLE
149	Chapter 11	SCIENTIFIC APPROACH TO THE GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT
163	Chapter 12	PHOTONS, WILL AND DNA
177	Chapter 13	UNDERSTANDINGS
195	Chapter 14	A PARABLE

221	Chapter 15	POSSESSED IN & OUT & CURSED BESIDES
239	Chapter 16	ANCESTRAL HEALING
257	Chapter 17	HOLY GHOST
267	Chapter 18	TRAUMA BASED MIND CONTROL
291	Chapter 19	HEARING, OBEYING & THE “STONE”
303	Chapter 20	“COURTS OF LOVE”?
319	Chapter 21	PORTALS
355	Chapter 22	KNOW THE TRUTH OF PORTALS
359	Chapter 23	CELESTIAL MECHANICS
389		AFTERTHOUGHTS
393		REFERENCES

PREFACE

It really is my hope that you will have read the first book in this series, *I See...Awake!*, before venturing into this one. That book lays the foundation that this one builds on. Since my daughter's coma some sixteen years ago, my ideas about how things work have changed mightily. There have been many occasions when I realized what an infant I have been, and still am, in regards to how the other side of the veil operates. This book is an experiential work. Most of what we are allowed to write about, we have experienced.

In the first part of this book we will explore more of those experiences that we and others have had. Everything from being given a second chance at birth, how people's spirits become earthbound, how often Heaven gets involved in our lives, and what happens at a church court on the spiritual side of the veil.

We will also explore energy, chakras, photons, and meditation. These are things I have learned about in the past 16 years that are important to understand. Especially if we desire to help others in addition to ourselves.

This book also continues with the education of how evil works so that we can thwart it. It is important to understand how mind control works, possession, and even dark portals. All of this is necessary in order to understand how to combat

and destroy evil in our lives. There is also the concept of learning much about how light operates by seeing what evil does, since it mimics light.

As in the previous volume, I have been allowed to use my daughter, Denise, and our gifted friend, Kitten. The Lord Jesus Christ has been extremely generous in what He has allowed them to share and teach us. Some of it might come across as harsh, but no harsher than our Lord calling the Pharisees “whitened sepulchres” which was a very crass insult at that time. (Matt. 23:27) Or telling Peter to “get thee behind me, Satan.” (Matt. 16:23) Our Lord tells it like it is. When He says “Amen” to those that abuse their so-called priesthood authority, stating that they no longer have any, does it sound like he is “playing around?” If some are offended, then it is my hope that the supposed offense will wake them up, and they will arise. But know that there was never any offense intended, just truth being offered.

We use stories from our own life because 1) We have been told to, and 2) We can speak from experience; a concept that was taught in the previous book. If I want to know how to become redeemed, isn't it better to listen and learn from those who have done so? That is one of the main reasons to read the Book of Mormon, as it includes the fullness of the gospel, redemption, and how to accomplish it from those that have done so. It is also the reason I was told to use Kitten and to quote from Denver Snuffer, both of whom have been redeemed. In fact, they are the only two that I know of right now. They see both sides of the veil and have the Father and Son “abide” with them. Might they know of things that we have no inkling of? Absolutely. I enjoy asking my daughter about these things we are told to write about because she is so open with me. From “I have no idea about that Dad” to “I saw this and that and here is what happened.” It has made for some interesting conversations with all three people, some of which is included in this work.

I hope that some eyes will be opened, but mostly I hope that people will truly begin to seek the Lord Jesus Christ, to know Him, and become like Him. That is the real basis for doing this book, to do His will and write about what He wants us to share.

I see many groups of people that claim to be seeking Him. I hope that is true. Yet Denver tells me that often he is “defending” me to some of those people. He says that they think I am “weird.” To those of you that think this, I offer my thanks. I am not institutionally educated like many of you. Funny, the Lord doesn’t seem to care. I would rather be weird and live in this incredible atmosphere God has given me than the spiritual void that most live in. You see, when someone claims to have authority, I want to see that mantel on him, the one of Light. I want to know the difference, how things operate, and the why. I am able to discern and even see where evil is, to know the intents of another’s heart. I desire to, and have entertained angels. If that makes me weird, praise God.

One group talked about Denise and Kitten and their “extreme gifts” saying that it is wrong to have those kinds of gifts. I would ask, what is it then that we should seek? We have been told to seek Jesus of Nazareth and become like Him. Did He not have “extreme gifts” such as walking on water, teleporting, manifesting food and wine, extreme healing, raising the dead, reading people’s thoughts, etc.? He didn’t have a veil and knew the Father who abided with Him. This is where I desire to be, among those who are like Him. Did He not say in the last days we’d do everything He did and then some?

Years ago I was the YM President in my LDS ward and was teaching the 16–18 year old young men in Priesthood meeting. About halfway through the lesson our Bishop interrupted me and asked for permission to teach them. I told him it was his quorum and sat down. He proceeded to ask them if they al-

ways wanted to be a member of the LDS Church. They all said of course they did. The Spirit told me where he was going, and I was pleasantly shocked. He proceeded to tell them that no, they didn't want to always be members of the LDS Church, that they should have the goal and desire to be a member of the Church of the Firstborn. Not one of them had ever heard of this doctrine before. He then taught them about it.

Denise mentioned this same thing in her book *In His Arms*. Many members of my church have called or emailed me and asked about this "Church of the Firstborn" she mentioned. They have never heard of it before. I usually tell them to look it up in the D&C. If we are this ignorant of our own doctrine, how can we be cognizant of "spiritual" things, of the "metaphysical?" We can't, and we certainly aren't, except for a very few. Their "heads are not buried" deliberately. They just don't realize that, like Joseph, we can ask deep questions too! Because it is not taught in church meetings—except in passing—most have a vague notion of what it is and are hesitant to ask in a class. Or since it is not mentioned or taught, it is something in the hereafter that we don't need to be concerned with. A member of the Church of the Firstborn deals with, meets with, converses with, and plans with the Lord Jesus Christ and many Terrestrial or translated beings. You see through the veil, you transverse through the veil, and you have been invited into their presence. Male or female, it makes no difference. There are many women prophets; we just don't get to hear of them, yet. Or they dwell among us, and we disparage them, saying their gifts are extreme. If a woman has been redeemed, I testify she is a prophetess, minimum. I want to play in their sandbox.

I have said this before and will say it again: When the Lord comes back, we must "vibrate" at or near the necessary frequency, or we will be burned. It will take much effort to become what we need to be in order to not become a crispy critter or a

pile of ash. Make no mistake about it, if you do not attain to that level, you will not be here. That is why the Lord tells us to wake up and to arise. “Adam, awake and arise!”

First of all, I give glory to my Father and Mother in Heaven. They are glorious and gracious to allow one such as me to do this work. I have no qualifications and seek none, except to become like my Lord and Savior. I am grateful to Him and His patience and also for the stick that He prods me with at times. Prodding is needed more often than I will admit. If you get anything from this book it is because of Him and only because of Him. So thank Him, praise our Father and Mother.

My sweetheart Dianne is my rock in all of this. She keeps me steady and going on course. If not for her I would be nothing. It is because of her love that I can keep going. Thank you.

Bev, thank you for doing another great editing job. I won't let them know that I can't write worth a lick, and my dyslexia even cracks me up. You are a godsend to me, literally.

My friend Bryan has taken care of formatting this beast and so much more. Thank you.

The cover art is by my friend Rebecca. What a great woman you are, a true Christ-centered woman. Thank you for two wonderful covers.

The sighted that helped with this work are greatly appreciated. The insights the Lord allows them to share are astounding and breathtaking if we will open our minds and hearts and really take a good look at what they have shared. God bless them for their courage and the “extreme gifts” the Lord God has blessed them with. Thank you, especially Kitten and Denise.

Once again, if you gain anything from this work, praise the Gods of Light for it.



This volume is solely my responsibility. I do not represent any group, religion, institution, or much of anything else. This work is not doctrine and doesn't pretend to be. I am not a scholar and am grateful for that. This "material" came as a result of our experiences, what the Lord has taught us, and allows us to share. If you learn from it, praise God. If you come closer to our Lord Jesus Christ, praise God even more.

Last of all, welcome to my wacky world of "extreme gifts" and the gifted. Which includes even the most extreme and gifted of all, the Lord Jesus Christ. This material represents our life and what we are about—doing His work. The education has been tremendous and hard. Yet because He is at the core of it, it has lifted us and allowed us to see a small bit into His world, that of Spirit, Light, wonder, and the miraculous. I hope you enjoy it and will learn as much as I have.

Chapter 1

NUMBERS

The book *The Great Pyramid Decoded*, gives us the meaning of some numbers. It is very interesting to read the definitions and apply them to what we know of the Gospel. How often does God use numbers? Are there ones that He seems to especially like? One, Two, Three, Seven, Twelve, Forty, and Seventy. Why? Why are there three beings in the Godhead? Why does the planet Venus trace the pattern of a five pointed star over an eight-year period? Why are there seven Chakras? It goes on and on. Take a look at the numbers and some of their meanings—the Gods of Light do.

One – Unity, the One

Two – Production, generation, productive

Three – Perfect, utter, complete

π – Eternity, the Divine, the Spiritual

Four – Physical, terrestrial

Five – Initiation, an initiate or Messianic Leader, The Great Initiate

Six – Preparation; and thus spiritually incompleteness or imperfection

Seven – Eternal or Spiritual perfection

Eight – Rebirth

Nine – Utter perfection (three squared)

Ten – Eternity, a millennium, a Messianic age

Eleven – Physical reality, realization, achievement

Twelve – All men, mankind, true man

Nineteen – Death, mortality

Twenty-five – The Great Initiate, or One-who-is-to-come,
the Messianic ideal (five squared)

One Hundred – Ultimate reward or retribution

Square or Rectangle – The physical

Circle – The Spiritual, celestial or eternal

Circle Superimposed on square or equal area – bringing of
the physical into conformity with the spiritual

Chapter 2

HEAVEN TOOK NOTICE

Around 2005, while I was traveling north to do a seminar, the Spirit told me to make a bid to take over a restaurant in Fairview, Utah. It was a place that my daughter and her husband were running for his parents. They were in the process of closing it due to many months of losses.

The Spirit told me to approach five other families and ask them if they would like to take over this restaurant and work it for the Lord, and *no one would be paid to work there—not one dime*. I had no idea how these families would view what the Lord was asking us to do. They still would need to work their normal jobs so they could provide for their families in addition to covering all shifts at the restaurant.

All five said they would do it. One said they would do it for me. That didn't sit well with me, as I knew they needed to do it for the Lord and not for a man. Nevertheless, I made the offer to take it over, and it was rejected. As I knelt on my knees that night, I reminded the Lord that this was His deal, and it had been rejected. He told me to have patience and wait.

The owners called three days later and said they would accept our offer to just take it over; no money involved in the transaction.

The five, (later six) families ran the restaurant, Country

Gardens, for two years. We learned much. We fought, cried, laughed, learned, worked very hard together, loved and hated each other, and yet we tried to obey the Lord in what we were doing. Country Gardens was His restaurant, not ours. It was hard to put in forty hours there and then work another forty hours or more to provide for my family. But the lessons learned were priceless, and little did we know how Heaven felt about it.

We started each day with prayer. Shields were placed around the restaurant to keep darkness away from it. *Love was consciously put into the food as we cooked it.* For Thanksgiving we fed anyone who wanted to come for a free turkey dinner. At Christmas time we fed fifty needy families a free Christmas dinner of any item on the menu that they wanted to eat, including dessert. There was a Christmas room upstairs loaded with purchased and donated toys, clothes, and other items that were given to the families for Christmas. Some families that came had up to twelve children. It was an amazing time and incredibly hard work. I remember leaving the restaurant many nights at one in the morning.

One family that worked with us, the DeGraws, dressed up as Dicken's Carolers and sang Christmas Carols in the restaurant and also outside at a Nativity we had built. We gave away free hot chocolate and apple cider.

One Thanksgiving when we provided the free dinner, we stayed open until 3:00 p.m. and then shut it down so we could clean up and go home to enjoy the rest of the day with our families. At 3:10 there was a knock on the door. I opened the door, and there stood a man and woman, a husband and wife.

The man said, "We've been traveling and tried to get a Thanksgiving dinner at the restaurant in Mt. Pleasant, but we got there at 3:05, and they wouldn't feed us, so we traveled here and found you. Could we get a meal here?"

I told him sure and asked them to come in.

We sat them in the booth near the register. They both ate two plates of food and dessert on top of that. It was fun talking to them because they had really “different” accents.

My daughter, Denise, sat over in the corner and just watched and smiled.

After the couple left I called our friend, Kitten, who has spiritual sight and asked her if she noticed anything about the restaurant as she had driven off with her husband. She had left as they walked up to our door. She stated that she had seen a huge light descend on the place but had been told to keep going home.

We asked Denise about them because the Spirit had told us that it had been the Lord and his Wife that had come to our restaurant. Denise laughed and confirmed that, indeed, it had been Them.

We felt Their presence for weeks, and some of us found ourselves sitting in that booth whenever we could. We marveled that They would come to our little place. Why? And then we’d ask ourselves if it really was the Lord and His Wife. Then the Spirit would confirm it all over again to us.

Later at Christmas time as we were feeding the fifty families, They came back. They listened to the DeGraws sing carols for thirty minutes inside the restaurant, carols to Him, about His birth, as He sat there. Then They went outside and listened to the DeGraws and others sing carols at the Nativity we had built.

Once again it was confirmed that They had come back to see the restaurant.

Years later a good friend called me and asked me to tell him of our restaurant experience.

“You mean my monumental failure?” I asked him.

“No, it was not a failure. It was a piece of Zion here on the earth for those two years, and *Heaven took notice*,” he responded.

He went on to say that Heaven took notice because a group of people listened to His voice and worked a restaurant for two years without pay, doing much good for the community while learning many lessons themselves. Because the people gave of themselves, wanting nothing back, Heaven took notice.



Now let's read the backstory and learn about what it takes when Heaven takes notice and shows up.

Backstory:

This backstory is a combination of what Denise and Kitten had to say.

This event was planned before we came to this earth in this eternal round. “If we listened to the Lord while in mortality and did the restaurant, He would visit it.”

Because we did it, even with all the “problems” associated with different families getting together to try and accomplish

something, Heaven took notice, and the Lord did visit the restaurant—twice.

First His wife came to visit Denise at the restaurant. That proved a calming effect on Denise and prepared the way for Him to come in a Telesstial body.

Every day we would shield the restaurant, and the demons and devils would stand across the street wanting to get at us. The shielding extended to the sidewalk across the street. During the two weeks before the Lord came to Thanksgiving dinner, He cast the dark entities miles away from the restaurant. Denise made the comment that it was a great two weeks there because they were not any bother at all to any of us.

Before He came from the Celestial realms, He went into a room to change Himself. He came to the restaurant in disguise as a seventy-year-old man with His wife. There is a room in the Celestial realms that shields a person from the frequency or light of the Celestial Kingdom. On earth you might think of a lead lined room that prevents any kind of frequency entering it. It would be considered a “clean” room so to speak.

He entered that room for several reasons. That is where he focused his mind on what He wanted to look like. “The change started at His feet and went up to His head. It happened pretty fast.” This isn’t science fiction; it is what the Gods of Light have the ability to do, as do individuals of a Terrestrial nature if they have studied and learned how to do it.

In this room He also lowered His frequency, or Light, down to a Telesstial level. If a Celestial being appears in their glory in a Telesstial world without those on that planet being changed or “transfigured,” they would not be able to endure the presence of the being. So the Lord caused His frequency or Light to lower itself to that of a Telesstial body.

This is painful for a Celestial being, even a God, to do this. It is also painful for a Terrestrial being to lower to a Telesial frequency in order to come here to accomplish a mission for the Lord. Once He had changed to how He wanted to look and lowered His frequency, He entered a portal in that room that leads to this earth. The Lord Jesus Christ has the ability to teleport Himself to wherever He wants, but used the portal this time to come here.

Heaven again:

After Denise had been released from the hospital the end of 1999, we didn't have much money to do any extra things. That December we decided to go to Temple Square in SLC to see the Christmas lights on Christmas Eve. It was a great experience, and as I have mentioned previously, neither Denise nor I wore a coat; we were both on "fire" for those few months.

When we left downtown SLC the kids wanted to go eat at a restaurant. We literally had no money in the bank and very little on us. Before we had left home, we checked all our pockets and everywhere we could think of and found forty dollars. We realized that we could only afford a fast food place, so we went to Wendy's in Taylorsville. We didn't care about the fact we had little money. We were just grateful to be together as a family and have Denise home. It was around 7:00 p.m. on Christmas Eve. They were going to close the restaurant at 8:00 p.m., so we quickly ordered our food and sat down. The bill was \$28 which left me with two fives and two ones in my pocket.

We were talking and having a great time; it was wonderful to be with my family on Christmas Eve. After we had received our food, a man entered the restaurant and walked up to us. He stuck a card in my face. I turned to look at him, and he appeared to be an older man who was down on his luck. The card stated that he was deaf and a mute, and asked if I would give

him "\$2 to \$5" to help him out. I turned the card over and saw there was sign language on the back.

It was Christmas Eve and we were all in the Christmas mood, so I took a five dollar bill out of my pocket and handed it to him and told him to have a Merry Christmas. We then watched as he went to others in the restaurant and handed them his card.

As he left the restaurant, the Spirit told me to ask Denise if the man had a "white aura."

"Hey Denise," I said, "did that man we gave the money to have a white aura?"

She looked at him going out the door.

"Yea, Dad. How much money did you give him?" came her reply.

"Five bucks," I answered.

"You should have given him ten," she answered back. I asked her why she felt I should have given the man ten dollars, and all she said was "You'll see."

Later I talked to her about this "man" we had encountered at the restaurant. She said the reason he had a white aura was because he was a translated being that had come to test me and the others in the restaurant. She mentioned that the Lord knew we literally had twelve dollars to our name and wanted to see if I would part with some of it for a "beggar."

It states in Hebrews in the New Testament:

"Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels unawares." (13:2)

The next day was Sunday. After church a man from our ward, Bro. Tanner, showed up on our doorstep. Dianne answered the door. Bro. Tanner was an older gentleman that had many severe

health issues and did not have much money. He had to use a cane to get around.

“Sister Mendenhall,” he greeted her. “I was sitting in church today and for some reason opened up my wallet. In it was a fifty dollar bill. Now I never have any money in my wallet, so I don’t know where it came from. But then the Spirit whispered to me to take it to the Mendenhall’s and give it to them. So here you go. It’s yours.” He then handed the money to my wife.

Denise was right; I did see. I came home a short time later, and Dianne related what this dear man had said and done. I am sure the Lord smiled love at Bro. Tanner that day and welcomed him into His arms when he passed away a short while later. Our family was very grateful to him as it was money sorely needed for food.

Later Denise would tell me that if I had given the man in the restaurant ten dollars instead of five, the Lord would have sent \$100 back to us. So there’s the reason she said that I should have given him ten dollars instead of just five.

Backstory:

The man that came to the restaurant was one of the three Nephites from the Book of Mormon, the short one. He came on assignment to test us and also the other people in the restaurant to see if we would give to a “beggar.”

From Kitten:

“Since he is a translated being he had to lower his frequency or vibrational rate or if you want to call it, light, in order to appear in our world so you and the others could see him. This is kind of painful for him and other translated beings to do, to manifest physically. It is not like the pain we experience, it is more like a pressure that is on him, especially in his head. The pressure is similar to what you might feel if you went to the

bottom of a diving pool or were to dive quite deep in the ocean. This pressure is felt because of how dark and evil this world is. He told me that they get used to it and learn to ignore the pressure/pain.

“If you give to someone, not wanting anything in return (like a tax deduction) then God can bless you tenfold. That is why Brother Tanner brought you a fifty dollar bill. If you would have given the Nephite ten dollars, you could have been given one hundred dollars by Brother Tanner.

“The Nephite had to go to Bro. Tanner’s and place the fifty dollar bill in his wallet because Bro. Tanner never did have money like that. This would have been easy for a translated being to accomplish when Bro. Tanner’s wallet was on his dresser while he was sleeping. He would have to materialize briefly and place the money in the wallet.”

There are several reasons for relating these two stories. Heaven does take notice of what we do and they also do come here to “test” us. The other reason is to understand that hell does mimic what heaven does, and they can also come as “angels of light.” We need to know and make sure that what we have been shown and what we have experienced is from above, not below. Yet even if an experience is from the adversary, there are still many lessons to be learned. We just need to know from whence it came.

“And our spirits must have become like unto him, and we become devils, angels to a devil, to be shut out from the presence of our God, and to remain with the father of lies, in misery, like unto himself; yea, to that being who beguiled our first parents, who transformeth himself nigh unto an angel of light, and stirreth up the children of men

unto secret combinations of murder and all manner of secret works of darkness.” (2 Nephi 9:9; See also D&C 128:20, D&C 129:8, 2 Cor. 11:14)

It does say “nigh unto an angel of light.” There is a difference. Maybe we ought to be sure to understand and recognize how to tell the difference. Will we make mistakes and be deceived? Absolutely. ALL of my gifted friends have been deceived on more than one occasion. That is part of the learning process. I have heard a few people declare that they never have been and can’t be deceived. I run away from these people because they are liars and satanic. There is always a learning curve associated with anything new.

Nevertheless, we were blessed on several occasions to have heaven take notice and visit us. At the restaurant it was a true blessing and made the restaurant experience well worth it, as hard as it was. It was a blessing to understand how it is no small matter for heaven to come here to a Telestial world in a manifested “physical body.” There is always much thought, conversation, and effort in what they do for us. To condescend and come here does cause them considerable pain. This also displays that indeed there were covenants made before this world about many different things, things that some might disparage as a thing of naught. I would be careful of that thought. Evidently heaven didn’t, and doesn’t, take covenants we fulfill as a thing of naught.

Chapter 3

ANOTHER CHANGE

Dianne was pregnant with our baby girl who transitioned while in the womb during the last trimester of pregnancy. We had her delivered a few days later at Pioneer Valley Hospital in West Valley City, Utah. She was a perfectly formed little girl. The umbilical cord had wrapped about three times around her neck, effectively causing her demise. She was beautiful and Dianne and I were very sad to have lost her. We named her Dawn and had her buried in a West Valley City cemetery under the “baby tree.” It was very hard on me at that little graveside service to carry her tiny little casket to the grave site. I had always wondered about Dawn and what had become of her on the other side of the veil.

After Denise had come home from that hospital and we found out about her gifts, she and I found ourselves at that cemetery near where Dawn was buried. I wanted to know if I could see or feel her near me and asked Denise how to do that.

“Just think about her and she will come,” was Denise’s reply.

I thought about her sweet perfectly formed little body in the hospital, and then coming here to bury her. It was painful and sweet.

“She is here now,” I was informed by Denise.

I couldn’t feel her at that point in time, but later learned that

when she came, my right elbow would be very warm. Later I would also learn to hear her speak to me, but that would be years down the road. I did feel a special bond with her, though I felt we would not ever be together as daddy and daughter.

Years later our oldest son got married. During his first few years of marriage our little girl Dawn came to me from the spirit world and said that she had received permission to be born again and would be the daughter of our son and his wife. I was excited about this. Our daughter Denise later confirmed what I had experienced was indeed real; Dawn was coming back. I was excited to have her as my granddaughter. She was a beautiful girl when I saw her in the spirit with pretty brown hair.

The only problem was our son's wife didn't want to have any children at that point. Dawn would come to me later and tell me that they had lost the opportunity to have her as their child. I was somewhat disappointed at this development but there was nothing I could do; it was not my business to convince my daughter-in-law to have a baby. I had never told them of my experience with Dawn.

Several years later after our middle daughter Debi had been married and given birth to two daughters, I was again visited by Dawn, though not in a vision; she spoke to my mind. She informed me that she had decided to try to come again and she would be the next daughter of Debi and her husband. I decided to not tell anyone about her visit and what I had been told.

Soon our daughter was pregnant again. I told everyone that this baby would not have red hair like her two sisters have, that she would be a brunette or have light brown hair. There was not much belief in what I told them, as the other two had beautiful red hair and they figured this one would too.

After the baby girl was born they announced that they were naming her Chloe Dawn. There was a huge grin across my face

when they told me what they were naming her. But I still didn't tell anyone about Dawn coming and that she was now here. As she started to get her natural hair color it was indeed brown. One day I asked Denise if she had looked at Chloe Dawn's spirit to see who she is.

"No I haven't," she replied.

I asked her to do so. She was surprised and seemed delighted when she looked and realized it was her (almost) sister Dawn, who was now to be her niece. It is also interesting to understand that her mother now would have been her younger sister if she had not initially transitioned.

Further Knowledge:

"In the pre-mortal life every individual has the opportunity to either select the parents they prefer coming through or a judgment from the Gods of Light will appoint the parentage. Generally there is a covenant between all involved individuals. There is a Council of the higher spiritual beings, being basic gods in their own right, who will take into consideration the petitioning for birth into mortality to unusual parents (not the first selected or covenanted), retry for birthing, quick remortalization and all factors pertaining to the desired parents of an individual in unusual circumstances. The desires of Heavenly Parents take top priority in all decisions. There are individuals who have pleaded so piteously and with such great desire they were granted their petition. This was what happened with Dawn on both occasions.

"Many factors can prevent the mortal birthing of any child. Sometimes it is simply the body is incorrectly formed and is therefore naturally aborted. Often the parents are strongly encouraged to continue to seek for conception and birthing of a child. Of course abortion is a terrible tool of the devil, and, unless there's tremendous repentance, that individual will never

return to either the mother or the couple.

“Dawn had to meet with a council to get permission to be born the second time. She had to convince them of the reasons she wanted to come back. She did so and was assigned to come to David and his then wife. She also received permission to appear to her father from the council. The council was made up of men and women. They had to vote on whether to allow her to come. After receiving permission she then went to a room where she was shielded where she prayed and meditated. The reason for this is to lower her vibration enough to come to the telestial world and appear to her soon to be grandfather, Doug. She appeared as a little girl because that is how he liked to think about her, as his little daughter.

“There are documented records whereby an infant was born only to transition within moments after. All that could be done medically to revive the newborn failed. The infant was in the deceased state for one to two hours before being turned over to the coroner for proper care and funeral arrangements. Every once in a while a mother becomes so distraught with the loss of her infant her own life is in danger. This greatly affects the individual whose body is lying deceased in the arms of the mother, father or even a sibling. The deceased individual cried with such anguish to be returned to the infant body to save the life of the mother or their own desire was so great, the love between the mother, father or a sibling and newborn is so great, they cry to be returned to the body. Their petition is granted, and miracle of miracles, life returns to the deceased infant body. Those children are living a normal happy life with the desired parents and families.

“When a highly spiritual and gifted child is in process of gestation the adversary will do all possible to destroy the fetus before birth, or infant shortly thereafter. If the parents of such a

being are of substantially lesser righteousness or there are lessons to be learned, the child will transition. These types of individuals require greater protection of the spiritual kind. Since it has been proven Dawn is one of the higher spiritually endowed individuals, there was a necessity of extra protection which her new parents, former parents now grandparents and close relatives provided. If the parents are incapable of bringing forth a greatly desired individual other means are provided.

“Granted, scripturally, there are very few instances whereby a child is conceived and brought forth via parents who are in the barren state. However, that is extremely rare and is for specifically, highly, spiritual purposes. In the case of Dawn, the intended father’s and child’s desires were great enough (with the mandatory protection) the petition of the individual was granted allowing a very close genetic and living relationship with the desired parents. Doug and Dianne have had, almost daily, parenting opportunities with this child.

“Doug and Dianne’s first son and daughter-in-law had the opportunity to bring forth a highly spiritual individual and rejected the idea. Although it hurts, an individual will leave and not return or even make effort to return to that type of parentage. The bond between Doug and his baby girl was strong enough an opportunity was watched and waited for in the future. She had to attend classes and then meet with the council again to tell them why she desired to go back. She convinced them a second time and was assigned to be a daughter to Doug’s middle daughter and her husband. After receiving permission to go back she went to a field and meditated and was able to send her thoughts to Doug’s mind that she was coming again to be his granddaughter. That opportunity came because Debi and Daniel were amenable for children on God’s time. All necessities were in place and Chloe Dawn was happily brought forth into mortality to be loved, taught, and often parented by

the original couple.

“There are many ways a child can be with the covenanted or desired parents, be it by natural birth, adoption, and even kidnapping. It has been known of a young child to actually depart mother/parents and find the desired parents who spiritually recognize the child and take them in.

“Sometimes there are cases where there are special circumstances whereby a child is to be brought into mortality in spite of the lack of spiritual protection from the parents. Our friend Kitten is one such. It was a necessity she be brought into mortality at the appointed time through parents who did not have spiritual knowledge but were possessed of reasonable spirituality. Her mother had the gift of dreams which gave some guidance. Her father was an honest, God-fearing, loving man who was a good provider and quite protective of his little family. Although forces of evil put forth great effort to destroy both the pregnancy and more especially the viable birthing of their first child, the heavens had placed protective factors ensuring the child would live. The child was brought forth in a literal war between darkness and light. One powerful being of darkness assisted in the protection of the birthing of the child for his own purposes. The combination of the great effort of the medical personnel, the angelic forces of light, and the determined effort of the being of darkness, although the infant did momentarily transition, the individual shortly returned to the body, was locked into it and continued to live. Unfortunately, that life was tenuous at best. The loving father, when informed of the perilous circumstance of his newborn infant daughter, with others of his faith went into the NICU and placed fingers upon her head and pronounced a strong prayer of faith and great love for the saving of her life. The infant literally pinked up under his hands. Unbeknownst to all of mortality, the child was born

with unusual spiritual gifts and abilities, hence the great efforts performed upon her.”

I really enjoy the further knowledge part of this story because it shows the process that must be followed in order to “change” what happened to what could be. Also the process necessary to appear to someone on the mortal plane and also to talk to someone on the mortal plane. What great lessons indeed.

Chapter 4

EARTHBOUNDED POWER OF THOUGHT AND EMOTION

We know that our emotions can and do have a tremendous effect on our own selves—spiritual, mental, and physical. But can OUR emotions affect others to the point that we can cause them distress or problems? Obviously the answer is yes. Let's take a look at several examples.

My daughter Denise had a friend transition a year or so ago. It caused her much distress, as it does many people. She met with the family often for a while and would talk to their son through the veil. It was mainly to give them solace, but also because she didn't want him to go; he was young, near her age.

From Denise:

“One of my friends died, and I had a hard time letting him go. He was always on my mind, and I didn't find it fair that he had to go. I would cry over this a lot. Another of my friends came over to visit for a week. I was told to go up to the place where James was buried. I didn't want to go, and I put up a fight, but the friend that came for the week said we should go. We got some flowers and drove 2 hours. When we got there, I got out of the car and ran up to his grave. I wanted to start crying, but I made myself not cry. My friend felt my guilt, my sadness, and my need to cry. So he started crying and turned to me and said, ‘You've

got to forgive yourself, say goodbye to him, and let him go.' He went back to the car, and I sat there finally crying and saying goodbye. When I was done I felt his happiness and he even thanked me. I felt happy to finally let him go. Now I can be happy for letting him go and not holding him here."

She realized that she was keeping him from moving on because of her focused thoughts about him and her intense emotions about his transition. After she went to his grave and made peace with him, he was allowed to move on in his progression in the world of spirits.

The location of the grave of my father is among many Polynesian families graves. We have noticed over the years the great care they give to their family grave plots, which has been nice because they will also mow over my father's grave. I have often wondered if many of their deceased ancestors remain "stuck" at their grave sites. One time Denise was with us decorating graves. I asked her if there were many of them there. The answer was, "Yes."

Most of us have no idea that we might possibly be keeping a loved one, friend, or anyone for that matter here on the mortal plane—earthbound. Some spirits that are earthbound stay here because they actually don't understand that their body has died. Others that suffered a violent death seem to get stuck in that particular spot. We have written about this in our other books, but people keep doing this to others—they need to be allowed to move on. It is important to understand the power of our thoughts and emotions and the effect they have on others. Actually not just others; our thoughts and emotions have the most powerful effect on us and what we manifest into our existence.

On a highway heading up north from where we live there was a car accident where a woman had been killed. A short while later we noticed that there was a huge heart made out of colored rocks with a cross at the top of it that had been placed where the accident had occurred. Her name is on the cross.

I had often felt that the woman's spirit is still on that spot. A few months later I would have my chance to see if my feelings were valid or not.



Further Knowledge:

From our friend Kitten:

“Due to a call of the highly spiritual kind, I was in accompaniment with Doug Mendenhall. We were on our way to a place called Eagle Mountain, Utah. We arrived at the junction of two highways in Spanish Fork Canyon. The date is unknown when a woman had died in a car accident at this junction. Her family built a surprisingly large heart-shaped memorial out of colored rocks on the side of the south-facing mountain. A memorial cross was placed just at the top of the ‘heart.’ It appeared to be

of a dark type of wood. Her name was on a plaque which was attached to the cross. As a result of these **strong emotions** of the family, the woman ended up bound to that spot. How do I know this? As Doug drove up to and stopped at the stop sign, I could see her standing just slightly uphill of the cross. She was dressed in pastel colors of browns, yellows, and pinks. Her hair was dark. Surprisingly thick, dark, rope-like strands literally bound her to that spot. It was strange seeing the dark strands of an unknown material attached to her. There were multiple lines attached to her wrists that splayed out forming a kind of semicircle around her. Each strand was attached to the ground, a good yard away from her feet. Seeing her, I asked, telepathically, why she stayed there. Surprised, she said it was because she was bound there. In kindness, I gave her information she could leave, if so desired. She did not know how.

“At the stop sign Doug asked if I could see anyone near the stone ‘heart’ on the side of the mountain. I acknowledged I did. He wondered if I could discover anything about the person. I told him I was in conversation with her.

“As Doug carefully guided the car up onto the highway and merged with the traffic, I continued to give information to the trapped woman to look to the light and she may be able to leave. She said she was bound to the area and could not move. There was a distinct sadness in her voice. She said she was tired of being an earthbound. She wanted to leave but honestly could not. That’s when I asked her if she had prayed for our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, for help. She had not thought of that. I prayed to our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, if He would go to her. He answered He was already in conversation with her. Praying to our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, I asked Him to go back to the woman and cut the lines that were holding her to the place her family had bound her. Several seconds later I saw

her cruising along with us at the window on my right. With a smile she thanked me for the information. She was flying along horizontally with the car. I simply said, "God bless you."

"Then my guardian popped back in behind me. Our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, had asked him to cut the strands holding the woman bound to the earth.

"Rising straight up, the woman disappeared to parts unknown. I gave a sincere prayer of praise, honor, and thanksgiving to God the Father, and a heartfelt thank you to our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, for hearing the prayer and releasing someone who had sincerely desired to vacate this planet.

"As we continued down the highway toward Spanish Fork, Doug asked if there were any others along the way. (Several others had died in that location.) Looking on both sides of the highway I saw no one else. There were no memorials either. It was understood, the only reason the one was still at the place of transition was because of the very strong emotions of her family. They were unwilling to let her go. As a result she ended up as an earthbound. It was gratifying to know our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, released her from the situation. Blessing, honor, glory, and power be to our Heavenly Father and His Son, our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ."

Further Understanding:

Because of the intense thoughts and emotions of this woman's family she was literally "bound" to the earth with multiple cords attached to her wrist and going to the ground near her. She could not move from that spot. Denise's intense thoughts and emotions towards the young man that had transitioned kept him "bound" from moving on in his progression.

How often do our emotions affect others? Are we conscious of doing this to others? Ourselves? Do we really understand the

power behind our thoughts? Behind our emotions? For good and evil? Can our own thoughts and emotions keep us “bound” in a state of unconsciousness? Is that one reason that God has told us to “awake and arise?” To throw off those chains that bind us?

Do we understand that thoughts and emotions are considered to be part of the Godhead? In volume one we discussed the conscious mind and how it expresses itself with thoughts, emotions, and actions. The scriptures call it the Mind, Spirit, and Body. It can also be called the Father, Mother, and the Son.

Additional Insight:

I was driving with Kitten the other day and I asked if she ever had the opportunity to “assist” others that were earthbound. She paused for a bit, apparently deciding if she wanted to answer. Finally she said that it seems word has gotten around in the spirit world about what had been done. “As I drive down the road and pass an earthbound person, they will look at me and ask if I’m going to help them or not. I tell them that help is coming and send my guardian to take care of it.”

Seems Kitten has become quite popular amongst the former earthbound spirits. She mentioned she has seen some that look like their feet are encased in concrete and can’t move. They are very grateful for the help given. The interesting thing to me is they can tell that she is able to see them. I guess they have become used to mortals from whom they have constantly petitioned help and the mortals have been oblivious to their pleas. Then one comes along that actually sees their plight and word spreads quite rapidly.

This is one of the reasons we have talked about becoming aware of all that is around us. Even the sighted don’t see or look many times. Kitten had passed that spot on many occasions and it wasn’t until she was asked if someone was there

and she put her focus or attention on the woman that she was noticed by her. It can't be stressed enough that we need to wake up and arise, to become those Saviors on Mount Zion that is written about. Many on both sides of the veil need help and most of the time it requires the hand of a mortal to set things in motion. If our noses are in our electronic devices or elsewhere, how can we ever "hear" or "see" the needs of others? Have we not only been dumbed down with our modern devices, but also been put to sleep? Who desires that? Why are they called "devices"? The etymology of the noun "device" means "division, separation, to divide." Isn't that appropriate, as they can divide and separate us from that which is important—God and the Spirit. It is time to wake up and become aware of what is around us, on us, and in us.

Addendum:

A while ago I passed the location where the heart and cross are in the picture. I noticed that there were now three crosses instead of just one. There had been three people pass away at this spot and now the other two people also had crosses put up with their names on them. A few weeks later I happened to have Kitten in my car while traveling to close some portals up north. I pointed out the new crosses to her and asked if she was going take care of the new person that was now "stuck" there, literally bound to the earth?

"I already am," she declared. "She saw me and asked, so my guardian went and released her."

"This accident happened a long time ago, why did she get earth bound there so long after her passing?" I asked.

"They had a ceremony to place the cross where there was crying and much emotion," she replied. "That bound her there in chains."

My, look at what we sometimes unintentionally do to our loved ones after they have transitioned in our attempt to honor and remember them; we cause them to be bound here, and therefore, cannot move on.

Chapter 5

SPOON BENDING?

About ten years ago the Spirit had me listen to a national late night radio show where the host had a guest who was going to teach all the listeners how to bend a spoon or fork with “energy.” This intrigued me because of my many friends who said they did energy work.

Since I was unable to get the radio station in my home I found myself outside in the driveway, in my car, listening to the show. They finally got around to discussing spoon bending at about 1:30 a.m. The guest had told everyone to get a spoon or fork ready and she would teach us how to bend it. I anxiously sat there waiting to experience spoon bending.

She then spoke of energy and how to feel it and then to “run” it between your hands. I did all she explained and actually felt a “ball” of energy between the palms of my hands. We were then told to place the fork between our thumb and index finger and then to run the energy between our hands. She had us shout at the fork, “Bend!!” which I felt foolish about, but since it was very late and I was outside in a car with the windows rolled up, I did it.

People started calling in saying they had bent their spoon or fork. After twenty minutes I still had not seen any positive results with my fork, but I kept running energy while listening

to the woman on the radio. At the twenty-five minute mark I felt something different about the fork. I stopped running the energy. With my left hand I touched the fork and it easily bent in half. To say I was elated is an understatement; I was ecstatic! Nevertheless, I then went to bed with my prized fork on my nightstand.

My family was not that impressed with my late night results.

“Dad, anyone can bend a fork in half, especially a cheap one like that.”

I had not wanted to ruin one of my wife’s good forks so I had gone the cheap fork route. I was happy with my “energy work” experiment nonetheless.

Soon I was told by the Spirit to call this woman, who taught energy work, and have her come to our town and do a one day seminar. It took some doing to commit her to come here to our little out of the way town, but she agreed to do it.

She came the middle of July. We held the event at the Senior Center which held 200 people. 225 showed up and the air conditioner really couldn’t handle the outside heat combined with all of those bodies. Then when you “do energy” it creates more heat. Some people did leave at noon. But the good news is about 80% of the room bent their spoon or fork. One woman had hers in knots within five minutes of the presenter starting the explanation. Another woman soon held up her bent plastic fork. Now that is hard to do, bend a plastic fork without it breaking.

I really focused and was able to twist and bend a heavy fork I had pilfered from my wife’s good stuff. It was great fun to feel the metal somehow change and to then be able to twist it with my hands. Below is a picture of my fork that I have shown to many hundreds of people since.



Please take out any fork you have and try to squish it together with your hands like this one was!

After this workshop I began to understand the value of focused energy work. The woman also taught us meditation which is even more valuable. She told us of Robert Bruce and his book *Energy Work* so I bought that and devoured it. It was after these experiences and constant practice that I began to feel the energy as it came out of my hands. I would sit and meditate after prayer and even during prayer while running energy up and down my seven chakras. This was to make sure they were spinning in the right direction and there were no stoppages of energy. Chakras are the seven energy centers in our body that are most often talked about. Spiritually sighted people see them and can see if there are problems there. I developed the gift of being able to feel them with my hand and can feel the blockages. We will discuss Chakras in Chapter 7.

While visiting with Kitten at her home, I would make an energy ball, fill it with whatever I wanted and send it at her. She could “see” all that I was doing and would tell me that it splattered on her shield. I would make energy balls, fill them with love, and send them to people just to see their reaction. It was amazing at times to see how people felt it. In other words, I played.

The other thing I realized after bending the two forks (which I forgot to mention when I also twisted the handle of a spoon) was the change in my own paradigm. Because of what I had considered to be foolish and silly, due to my own limited experience with energy, my belief was not possible to be changed instantly. I now knew energy was real and also knew there was much more to learn about it. With this in mind I sought the Lord's permission to enroll in energy classes or workshops of varying modalities. The answer was always "No."

One day I found myself at a friend's house discussing things of a spiritual nature. There were about five women there and me. I mainly just sat and listened, wanting to learn all I could. Several of them were only partially veiled and most did some kind of energy work on others. In other words I wasn't even the rookie in the room, I wasn't even to the novice stage, as I had never really "worked" on anyone and had no intentions of doing so.

The Lord seemed to have other ideas. After being there for a while I was told to "run energy" down my friend Kitten's body. She had a spinal cord damage from a broken back and needed crutches or a wheelchair to get around in. My argument with the Lord was short-lived and I asked Kitten if I could run energy on her. She said she had heard Him and agreed to let me.

I sat at her head and had one of the women sit at her feet and hold one foot with each hand. I was then told to run the energy out of my right hand down Kitten's right side and into the woman holding her feet, out of the woman and up Kitten's left side to my left hand. I placed one hand on each side of her head and began running the energy. After a while the Spirit said to now run it out of both hands, starting at her head, to run it down her body. I saw a wall of energy in my mind's eye as

the Spirit showed me what to do. The Spirit then said I would encounter some resistance when I got to her liver, but to push through it. Then the Spirit said that when I got to the kidneys it would be like hitting a ten foot wall of snow and I'd have to push for all I was worth. I saw a huge snowbank in my mind's eye.

It happened just as I was shown and told. At one point I wondered where all this negative stuff was going and I opened my eyes to look. I had kept them shut because I was embarrassed to be doing this in front of these wonderful ladies that had so much more experience than I did, while I had zero experience at this point.

Looking at her feet I saw the woman holding Kitten's feet blowing for all she was worth. I guess the "negative" stuff was pouring into her. This was all new to me and we didn't know that she needed to get rid of this stuff by giving it to our Lord Jesus Christ. She didn't do this and was sick for several days afterward.

After I was done, the Spirit told me to ask Kitten if I could run energy down her back. She said that would be fine and she slowly turned over onto her stomach.

Now I really was self-conscious. I started running energy out of my right hand from the base of her head to the bottom of her spinal cord. My hand was some three or four inches above her shirt or back. As I ran my hand down her spinal column, I could feel where there was a break in energy about the middle of her back. The Spirit told me to ask her when she couldn't feel the energy anymore.

"Tell me when you can't feel this anymore," I said.

When my hand got to where I could feel the break in energy she said, "Now."

I kept running the energy and feeling the break. Then the Spirit said to command her nerves to regenerate and to fulfill the measure of their creation and to do it in the name of Jesus Christ. So I started doing this silently.

After a while the Spirit told me to ask her again when she couldn't feel the energy. I started at her neck and went to the base of her buttocks, but she didn't say a thing. I told her again to tell me when she couldn't feel it and repeated the same procedure. She again didn't say a thing, so I asked her again to tell me.

She then said she could still feel it. I told her that I was at the bottom of her bottom. She whipped her head around and looked. I think she was shocked.

"I can feel my feet," she said.

It was an incredible moment for me. A witness of the Lord and His goodness, how He heals and lets us be a part of it. It has been amazing to feel the energy come out of my hand, to hear the Lord tell me what to say and do and then to see the miracles. Admittedly, I was still a baby, not even a toddler, in the Lord's mortal school of learning about Spirit.

The next day I called her and asked what had happened. She went on to tell me that her kidneys had pretty much failed and she hadn't urinated in three days. I asked how she was now. She said she couldn't quit urinating. She also said that she could now feel her feet when she walked. We knew that she is not allowed to have her back honestly healed but the good Lord helped her in other distresses.

"For behold, thus saith the Lord God: I will give unto the children of men line upon line, precept upon precept, here a little and there a little; and blessed are those who hearken unto my precepts, and lend an ear unto my counsel, for

they shall learn wisdom; for unto him that receiveth I will give more; and from them that shall say, We have enough, from them shall be taken away even that which they have.”
(2 Nephi 28:30)

The Lord gives us line upon line. As we step forward with belief and action, He will give us more and thereby we will gain wisdom. Knowledge is not understanding, and understanding is not wisdom. A definition of knowledge is “something learned and kept in the mind” which could also be called an amassed familiarity with facts. These facts can be any number of things from scientific findings, history, mathematical principles, politics, etc. Or even energy work. All it tells us is that a person has the ability to remember a great deal of information or facts.

Understanding, or intelligence, is the knowledge and ability to judge or the ability to understand facts and their inter-dependent relationships to each other. Just knowing facts does not allow someone to make the connection between them. That takes intelligence or understanding. Unfortunately, this is where the majority of people stop with their progression. They believe that intelligence is the end of knowing, and it isn't. That might be one reason we have so many “knowledgeable and intelligent” people that don't know squat. You might know a lot and know how that knowledge or those facts inter-relate to each other, but that is it.

Knowledge and understanding requires wisdom for it to be harmonious and beneficial. The problem people have is wisdom can't be learned through science, reason or logic. When all desires to achieve personal profit, prestige and power have been eliminated then true wisdom can be gained through experience. We can also gain wisdom through self-sacrifice and suffering. Wisdom is gained through action, or when we “hearken unto [His] precepts, and lend an ear unto [His] counsel.” It is when

action is applied to knowledge and understanding that we then gain wisdom.

The woman who taught spoon bending gave me knowledge about energy work, how to create energy and apply it. I gained understanding by listening to the facts and how energy relates to us, our bodies and our spirits. It was great knowledge to have but did it do me any good? Not really. Then I listened to the Lord Jesus Christ and He told me to act and apply this knowledge and understanding for the benefit of my good friend. It wasn't about me or "look what I can do" or did. It was about serving another and as stated above, there was nothing about personal profit, prestige or power. It was about humbly doing what the Lord asked and having the faith to step off the proverbial cliff to do it.

By doing all of this, some wisdom was gained, though there would still be much to learn. But along with that wisdom I have found He also gives us a quiet confidence in Him. This is why the Lord stated, *"For with God all things are possible."* (Mark 10:27) You know it is not you doing the "healing" on someone else, it is the true Healer, our Lord Jesus Christ. I have met many "healers" that say "I did this" or "I did that." I, I, I, and I again. Always about themselves or they claim they tapped into the Universe or my personal favorite, "Source." My point being that their ego has them claiming credit when we have been told to thank God for all things; all things are possible because of HIM. We are puny creatures that came down here to learn how the Gods of Light operate and to become like they are. Of course they will allow us to take their laws, apply evil to them and do many amazing things. The magicians of Pharaoh copied what Moses did, did they not? The Adversary has much power you can tap into if you are of a dark evil nature or even a misguided mortal.

We learn to become enlightened and like our Parents line upon line. We “practice” whenever we are allowed to by our Lord, always with His permission. This is His creation. We should honor everyone’s agency and don’t give ours away except to our Lord, and Savior, Jesus Christ who will give it back.

As we gain knowledge and understandings we can then convert that to wisdom by obeying the Lord Jesus Christ in all things and then we become like Him. This is the program He employed to become like His Father, is it not?

Further Knowledge:

From our friend Kitten:

“Being the guinea pig for the experience of someone having never even attempted using spiritual energy, who is totally ignorant of how much power they actually possess, can be rather disconcerting. Holding his hand several inches above the body was a kindness. Doug had two settings: On and off. It was either nothing or 100% on. Shielding helped. Nevertheless, for a highly sensitive person, that flow of power was a little too much like live electric wires dragged down my body. Little children love to experiment on living objects just to see what happens. In this case the “guinea pig” was pre-warned as well as told the experiment was a necessity for a gifted padawan to have his first lesson working with “The Force!” The padawan was clueless of being highly gifted. Just because we are not aware of, nor use, the God given gifts or talents (we are born with) does not mean we have none.

“As Doug moved his fully charged hand, the energy was all too well felt, UNTIL he reached the damaged area of the spine. It was as if the gift was promptly shut down. There was nothing at all. His hands were still there. The strands of energy could still be seen flowing down the body. Yet, nothing could be felt. As soon as the damaged area was moved past, the sensation

was substantially reduced.

“About plowing through the poor defenseless, damaged, kidneys. It was like having a cat claw peeling sunburned skin off. My jaw had a good workout from clamping the mouth shut. The Savior requested no emotion be shown or Doug would become even more frightened. Soooo, the guinea pig stayed silent and as expressionless as able. Thankfully, the Savior eased back the all-out blast of the energy flow so respiration could, reasonably, function.

“Living energy is, most often, blue and white in color. It can also be silver, pink, light violet and green, depending on use or need. Evil uses coal black and deep red colored energy. Flowing clean water, streaming from a hose or pipe, gives a good idea of what energy appears like to the sighted. Of course it is more ethereal, but the idea is quite close.”

“For the spoon bending lesson, it was interesting to see and feel the general energy rise. With the rise of energy the heat inside the room also rose. Looking at my own hands, it was noted the normal white glow of energy was longer and larger. With so many people, in close proximity, generating spiritual power, it is no wonder much was accomplished as a result.

“I brought a set of heavy, thick teaspoons for the lab work. With one simply sitting in my hand, the thick, steel teaspoon heated up beyond normal body heat. It was not simple body heat. As instructed, the entire spoon was gently rubbed while visualizing (actually seeing) light flow over it. The flow of energy was physically felt. It feels similar to a thin coat of warm oil slipping along the hand. The light changed from white to a yellow color. The metal took on a slight shimmering quality. Being so fascinated with the light show, I forgot to check for pliability. The instructor reminded everyone to check if the objects

were malleable yet. Dutifully the spoon was taken between the fingers, at the thickest part of the handle, and easily bent almost in half. Interesting! Thinking the way it had been reshaped had rendered it rather difficult to use, I later tried to bend it back without using the lesson. It didn't budge. It was energetically reheated and, sure enough, it easily returned, close to its original shape. Since then, if an alloy object is not quite the needed shape (after checking no one is around) it is petted then reshaped to what is needed. A very useful lesson. Thank you."

"In the late 1960's, an adult returned missionary was speaking to a chapel full of people, (most were teenagers) at a Sunday church meeting. Due to an injury, he had to return home before completing the normal time of call. Shortly before his 20th birthday, he and other missionary companions had gone out for some R&R for the day. As young men are want to do, they goofed off. They were mindful of nature and other's property. Nevertheless, while enjoying life, running, jumping and in general expending excess energy, the speaker leaped up over a large object to land badly. There was instant pain in his left ankle. The affected part was examined. It showed a rapid progression of bruising and swelling. He became frightened it may be broken which would bring harsh reprimand and possible expulsion from the mission field. Perhaps it was only badly sprained. Effort to stand upon it only resulted in him dropping to the ground again. The pain was too great. The group decided to lay hands on the injured missionary's head for healing. Without any preparation, a simple prayer that the pain be stopped and the ankle healed, was pronounced. Amazingly the pain ceased! The injured youth stood up and walked around. Joy of joy the injury would not have to be reported after all! Oddly, the swelling remained. Shrugging it off, he and the group happily returned to their quarters.

“For a week he performed in his capacity as a missionary, pain free. The only problem was, the ankle continued to swell. Nothing he did reduced the swelling or faded the bruising. At every opportunity possible, the affected part was propped up. Icing and cold soaking eased the swelling a little only to return, greater in size, during use. Finally, the swelling could not be hidden and the adult leader took note. When the leader examined the missionary’s ankle, it had swelled to the size of the calf and was quite badly bruised. The young man was promptly taken to the local hospital emergency room. The X-rays revealed the ankle and part of the leg had been broken. With all the walking on it, the wound had been exacerbated to the point surgery had to be performed to save his leg.

“In tears the young man confessed what had caused the injury, the blessing and results. The entire group could not understand why the companion had not been healed. They had laid hands on his head and blessed him to be healed. The pain was gone! Granted the swelling never reduced, but still they had prayed with the expectation all would be well. After all they held the priesthood of their church. How could there be that much injury without pain? All the young men were beside themselves with consternation and worry.

“By the grace of God, the mature adult leader happened to have the Gift of Revelation. In private, the situation was presented to the Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. The answer was quite startling.

“Collecting the injured missionary’s companions, the leader returned to the hospital. In the injured companion’s room, the answer to the conundrum of why no pain with such a bad injury was given. The young men had been in an unauthorized area performing in ways unbecoming of anyone on a mission for the Savior. There was no preparation for the voicing of the prayer.

Theirs was quick and to the point. Nothing else. That type of injury required fasting, prayer, and holy oil before administration. To top it all off, after the pain “miraculously” vanished no one thought to thank Heavenly Father or the Savior.

“An evil Being answered the prayer! The pain was only blocked. No healing of any type was performed. That is why the swelling and bruising remained. The object of the evil was to prevent the missionary from completing the calling. That was accomplished.

“As soon as arrangements could be made, the injured missionary was sent home. It was a year before the leg and ankle were fully healed. The leg was in a cast for six months, in a long leg brace for three months followed by three months of physical therapy. During that year, great repentance, much prayer, and a lot of soul searching was instituted. Pleading with the Savior, because of the mission having to be cut short, he begged for some type of work that could be viewed as “missionary.” Eventually, the Savior answered via an exceptionally strong impression. The young man (then almost 22 years old) was to go out to (as many as allowed) church groups and speak of the experience. He was to teach and warn others the adversary can and will affect the mortal body in ways never thought of. All who do any work under the call of Jesus Christ must be very careful to hold to the narrow path He puts each on. For many years, that man spoke and taught about the very unusual mission. His humility was amazing. All praise and honor was given to Heavenly Father.

“The Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ turned the badly performed mission of a young man into a much greater one. Although the mission in his youth was thwarted, it paved the way for another one. However, the man admitted, the original mission would have reached others ready to hear the glad news

but had to wait, several years, for another with the same message. It would have been far better to have been obedient to Jesus Christ. Many took the lesson taught to heart.”

“Many years ago, an amazingly righteous man of God, turned to evil for a time. While in the evil state, he was taught how to turn light into the use of darkness. His wife experienced a bad miscarriage tearing the uterus. Although it was medically repaired, it continued to cause health issues. It simply did not heal as it should have. Having great evil power, by sucking life force energy from others, he was able to heal his greatly beloved wife. Yes, evil can heal.”

“After the great biblical flood but before Christ’s birth, a man born and raised in evil rose in power to be exceedingly, powerfully, evil. To him Satan was the only true god of heaven and earth. He knew of no other. Oddly, he greatly loved his own family. Those considered “holy” were healed by him. It was always accomplished by absorbing life force energy from others around or near. However, he was careful with the amount taken from any single individual but only if there were enough to swipe the needed energy from. Of course he did not take such from those he deeply loved. It was through that ability he killed many.”

“Years ago, a young woman was shown Joseph Smith Jr. and his life. It was as if she was there, experiencing life with him. For the last years of his life, he was granted the gift of healing. Before going out to teach or heal, Joseph received brilliant, white light from Jesus Christ before, especially, going out to heal. Even with being pre-charged Joseph would be badly drained if

there were many in need of healing. A time or two, in the great effort to save many, he forgot to find a place of solitude to allow the Savior to “charge the batteries” again. Joseph was using his own life force energy to heal which caused him to nearly collapse. Most of the time it was purely the effort of bringing the Light of Christ through to mortality that was cause for most of the fatigue. He had the gift to bless an object to carry the healing light of Christ to others. Those with spiritual sight could see the mortal fibers or grains of the object were changed into something with an ethereal quality. Light glowed from them. Those who the blessed object were laid upon, in prayer, were healed.

“Joseph Smith taught, those with any gifts of the spirit of light obtain needed strength and/or life energy (a.k.a. spiritual energy) from angels sent from God, or Jesus Christ. The man of great evil taught worshipers of Satan to take what is needed of strength and/or life energy from other mortals and even evil spirits.”

Chapter 6

ENERGY WORK

In the previous chapter we related a few of our experiences with using energy to bend spoons, to effectuate healing, and to keep ourselves in balance. Years ago I read a book about calling down the powers of heaven in order to effectively do God's work. Is it God's energy and Light we are calling down? What are the "powers of heaven"? If the Lord went away to charge up His batteries, just as Kitten talked about Joseph Smith doing before he did healing work, should we take notice of both Christ and Joseph Smith doing so? Might it be something that we not only should take a good hard look at, but should also do? Or is all of this talk of energy, meditation, chakras nothing but Eastern religious or New Age malarkey, not worthy of the time of our "spiritually" illuminated Western minds? Why would someone that walks the heavens like Denver Snuffer make a statement in his book *Preserving the Restoration*: "We need to search the gospel to obtain illumination for our hearts and minds." (p. 3) Really Denver!? Isn't "illumination" one of those Eastern "energy" terms we need to stay away from? But what if it's true? What if this kind of thing is important, even perhaps more important than seeking relief in a bottle of pills or a bottle of whatever? Or perhaps more important to our immortal souls than sitting on the sofa with fake and spiritually deadening offerings from Hollywood, or sitting at a sporting event in which our modern day gladiators battle each other as we cheer them

on while we imbibe in the local offerings of mild barley drinks? Do any of these things matter? Or is it more important to our eternal welfare to connect to our Lord Jesus Christ in order to become like Him? Does this take work?

If we are not balanced energetically, it is much harder to keep ourselves balanced emotionally, mentally, and spiritually, especially since all three consist of energy, a finer or more subtle substance. The importance of Robert Bruce's book *Energy Work* can't be stressed enough. Yes, there are many volumes that pretend to teach more, but none do it in such simple, easy to understand terms as Robert does. From his book *Energy Work*:

*"My eldest son, Benjamin, is a psychologist. He has practiced tactile imaging energy work for several years, besides studying various systems such as Zen, Tao, Yoga, et cetera. A few years back, he signed up for a course in Iron Shirt Chi Kung. **He was told that most students would start feeling significant levels of energy movement if they practiced every day for a year.** But during the first day of instruction, Benjamin was feeling major energy movement. (His instructors could not understand such rapid progress, and they were not open to Benjamin's explanation.) I have heard many similar reports over the years."* (p. 6, emphasis added)

Why did Benjamin feel major energy movement his very first day instead of after a year of practice? Because he did the simple things his father had taught him. He could feel the energy in his body, feel it move in his body, and knew how to clear himself. So why do energy work? Again from Bruce's book:

"Normally, many of the structures within the human energy body are virtually dormant. They function at a level sufficient for normal physical existence, but on a very low

level in a spiritual sense. These structures and energy centers can awaken accidentally, often causing spontaneous psychic experiences, or they can be brought out of dormancy by spiritual practices and energy work.

“The benefits of energy work come on every level. It encourages the physical body to function better, to maintain and repair itself more efficiently, and to resist disease. The ability to work directly with your energy body allows you to stimulate your body’s own self-healing mechanisms in specific ways to target injured or diseased areas.” (Ibid.)

Energy work is spiritual work. In the previous chapter when Kitten’s kidneys had shut down for three days, the Lord wanted someone to “work” on them. I happened to show up. If I had not been exposed to energy work, learning to clear myself and to send focused energy to her kidneys, nothing would have happened. Could I have laid hands on her head and voiced a blessing to accomplish the same thing? Of course if that is what the Lord Jesus Christ had wanted. He asked that I “run energy” on her. If I had been told to voice a blessing and laid hands on her head, what would the mechanics of that blessing entail? What would the oil do? Does it make for a better spiritual connection? Would I have been calling down the powers of heaven through our combined faith to effectuate the healing? What does that look like? Kitten talked about the energy flowing out of my hands (uncontrolled at that point) and into her. That is what the Lord used to “heal” her kidneys. Is that what the Lord did, use controlled focused energy to effectuate the healing He did? Or was it just the mud he put on that man’s eyes that healed his sight?

We will discuss later how our DNA is full of photons or light. When those of an Eastern bent say we are “light beings,” they are speaking the truth. We believe we are “solid,” but we really

aren't. It just takes being here in this "coarse" setting to give our real selves the ability to carry this "denser" material around. We are energy and light, which of course is the same thing. Some just vibrate at a higher frequency, like those of a Terrestrial or Celestial nature do. Back to Robert Bruce:

"Vital energies flow through every part of your body. This is every bit as important to life as blood. Just as your physical body will adapt and change in response to lifestyle, exercise, and diet, so will your energy body—for better or worse. When you do energy work, your energy body will be excited into higher levels of activity. And just like working out regularly in a gym improves your physical body, this progressively improves the fitness and functionality of your energy body.

"Psychic and spiritual development are heavily dependent upon energy body activity. Everyone has dormant or partial psychic abilities and everyone has great spiritual potential, but very few people get to realize these things in any significant way. Body awareness-based energy work methods allow for the specific targeting of energy conduits and primary energy centers. By exercising these, they can be activated, developed, and evolved. This translates into actual spiritual development and evolution." (Ibid. pp. 6-7, emphasis added)

Robert had told me that Joseph Smith was the greatest American mystic there ever has been. He knows what he is talking about. He understands and has seen in many people that getting off their derriere, practicing, and running energy *"translates into actual spiritual development and evolution."* This is why we discussed the concept of going from unconsciously incompetent to unconsciously competent in the last book. Want to become proficient at ANYTHING? Then practice. Practice long

and hard. The Lord was no different. He learned line upon line and precept upon precept. He practiced!

Whenever I heard the statement that we must come to know ourselves, it was just a bunch of “new age” or Eastern mumbo jumbo and had no significance. That has changed. Now I understand the extreme importance of coming to know myself in several aspects. One of the more important is to know where I am spiritually, which begins with getting my “energy body” right before my God and ready to receive what He needs to send me for myself or for someone who has come seeking comfort or help. If my energy tank is on empty, can I offer that person anything? Yes, I know we bring in Heaven’s or God’s light to effectuate the work, but if my energy centers are so out of balance, going the wrong direction, or I’m so full of sin that God can’t work through me, what good am I? Think about Frank Fools Crow’s story from the last book in this series. He spent his life getting ready for the next person the Lord would send to him. Is that not what our Lord Jesus Christ did? Are we better than He is?

Let’s continue with Robert Bruce:

“Every cell of your body is alive with bioelectrical activity that produces biomagnetic fields. Beneath this activity exist the layers of subtle and spiritual energy fields that comprise the human energy body. This subtle body is every bit as complex as its physical counterpart, even though it’s subtle and spiritual structures are difficult to detect.

“...To truly grasp this you must learn how to feel energy for yourself by feeling and moving your own energy.... Only when you feel your own energy will you truly know that you have an energy body. And only then will you be able to truly work with energy...

“The human energy body has multiple layers and energy centers. Energy centers (also called Chakras) are like the vital organs of the energy body. This includes the seven primary energy centers (major Chakras), hundreds of secondary energy centers, three energy storage centers, and dense areas of tertiary centers (tiny energy exchange pores). There is also a central channel (Sushumna) running up the center of the body, with two major conduits (called Ida and Pingala) winding up either side. This structure is traditionally represented by the caduceus symbol (staff of Hermes).” (Ibid. pp. 2-3)

I really feel Robert’s book is a must read if someone wants to progress spiritually and energetically. I sure wish this had been taught to me when I was a child. Anciently it was taught. The ancients understood energy and used it daily.

An important aspect of learning to increase spiritual energy is visualization and breath work. It has always been hard for me to “visualize.” Through much hard work I have been able to “see” on many occasions, but to just “do it” has been hard. Robert Bruce teaches visualization a completely different way. There are steps to becoming “clairvoyant” and being able to truly “see.” I hate to say this, but it involves understanding the concepts and then much, dare I say it—practice. Back to Robert:

“Most people have problems visualizing, and many believe they cannot visualize at all. But visualization is a natural ability that everyone can do perfectly immediately. Visualization is not a visual skill. You do not have to see anything visual in your mind when you visualize. If you do see something, it is a mind’s eye vision (clairvoyance) or an awake, lucid dream-type experience.

“Visualization is pure imagination, pure fantasy. Every

child can do this perfectly. A visualization exercise or led meditation is exactly the same as any other fantasy, where memory is used to build a fictional scenario in the mind's eye. It may be full of sights, sounds, smells, tastes, textures, and feelings, but nothing is actually seen visually.

“Memory plays an important part in imagination and visualization. Have you ever replayed past actions in your mind, in your mind's eye, to help you find a lost item? Replaying or re-creating events—whether real or fictitious—involves the constructive use of imagination. This is perfect visualization, and everyone has the natural ability to do this perfectly—right now!

“The very word visual-ization is a big part of the problem, especially when used to describe inner practices like meditation and energy work. This problem is increased by the visual terms commonly used to describe nonvisual experiences, which includes all nonvisual psychic perceptions. This is compounded by people who psychically perceive things (not actually seeing anything visually) habitually using visual terms like ‘I saw,’ ‘I see,’ and ‘I am seeing.’ This is often misleading to students. More accurate terms like ‘I sense,’ ‘I feel,’ and ‘I perceive’ are less confusing.

“There is a hidden ego component in the above problem. In our competitive society, it sounds far more convincing if psychic perceptions are stated as being visual experiences. It can be related to how eyewitness testimonies are taken as evidence superior to gut instincts and feelings. ‘I sensed this’ or ‘I perceived this’ doesn't sound as convincing as ‘I saw this!’ I cannot see the popular use of these terms changing, but clearer explanations and instructions can help overcome the problems they cause for students.

“The visualization problem is worsened in any group where the teacher and a few students happen to be naturally clairvoyant. Clairvoyants do see what they visualize in a visual mind’s eye way. They often do not realize that this does apply to the vast majority of people, and so students get the impression that visual visualization ability is the norm. This can lead to students believing that they are deficient in this area. This misunderstanding totally stunts student development. Many students in this situation will pretend that they can see what they are told to visualize, lest the rest of the class think they are deficient. This whole problem can be overcome by giving more accurate explanations.” (pp. 18-19)

I became aware of this “visual visualization” early on in this journey with my daughter. She came out of her coma “clairvoyant,” being able to see in her mind’s eye. Over time we met many others that I would always describe as “like my daughter,” though I knew most didn’t “see” as she did. Then I realized that on days in which her health wasn’t very good, she really couldn’t see and she’d just “fake it.” By that I mean she was still able to hear and perceive things, but would still use the term, “I see.”

In my own life I have had a hard time with visualization until I realized I could imagine things, and then I used that process. There have been times when a vision has come, as when Denise and Dwight, our two youngest appeared to me and told me I had “to talk Mom into having more children.” Another time I saw a man with two children who was being prepared to marry Denise and told her about him years ago. When he showed up I recognized him from that vision. Yet most of what I do is perceive, not “see” as Robert Bruce indicates. The Lord has blessed me with a gift of discernment. I have found that this gift does

open up the mind's eye, so sometimes I can see. It is all a process of learning and using the gifts. The other night when we were discussing the use of a pendulum to help us spiritually, a good friend said that she felt something blocking her. I looked at her and could discern a dark spiritual net or netting over the top of her head. Then I could "see" it. What was seen was hard to describe, so I mentioned it was a spider's web over her head. We had her use the pendulum to second witness what had been said, and it was right. There are many times now when voicing a blessing, I will be shown in my mind's eye what the Lord wants said. So I have to then describe what He is showing me. This has been a process. I believe that learning about energy and running energy have been a big part of this process. It clears me out and opens me up.

I have seen what Robert talks about how others feel intimidated when around the sighted. It seems to make them feel totally inadequate, and then they don't use their gifts. There have been times when I have been in a room with gifted people, and I heard "I see this," or "I see that," over and over again. I wondered on more than one occasion if it had become a competition. It is not a competition. It is about becoming aware of our own bodies: physically, mentally, spiritually, and energetically. Will there ever be deception? Absolutely.

What we think of ourselves has a huge bearing on what we are able to accomplish spiritually or energetically, but also on any level. When we had the energy workshop and energetically bent spoons, about 80% of the people were able to do it. I was all excited when I approached one family and asked to see their spoons. All of them said the same thing, "We can't do things like this." All of their spoons or forks were perfectly normal, nothing happened because they had declared it to be thus, and God's natural law states that we get back what we give out. When I hear people constantly say they can't see, I now think

in my mind, “They are right; they can’t see and never will.” They have declared it to be that way, so it must be. But when they stop making a negative declaration and begin declaring that they can, then they will.

Bruce’s way of teaching energy work overcomes these problems because he uses body awareness and tactile imaging:

“The key to effective energy work is developing tactile awareness of your physical body. This stimulates the flow of vital energy and encourages spiritual development. Many traditional systems utilize this principle. Zen practices, for example, stress developing an acute awareness of one’s physical body and how it interacts with the physical world in every possible way. Walking meditation is a good example, where one learns how to walk consciously and be aware of every shift of gravity, muscle movement, and tactile contact. This includes wearing thin-soled, moccasin-type shoes to heighten tactile contact with the ground.

“Your natural center of awareness rests in your eyes, as sight is the strongest sense if you are sighted. This is the window through which you observe the physical world. But your center of conscious awareness is not restricted to your eyes. Your mind does not reside inside your head, but includes your entire physical body. The eyes are just the habitual focus of consciousness.

“Your conscious attention, focused on a specific part of your body, energetically stimulates that part. When you move this focal point of body awareness through your body, you also stimulate the underlying energy body structures of that area. Body awareness movement causes direct energy body stimulation. This is tactile imaging. In a similar way, energy can be moved throughout your body, and

specific parts and energy centers can thus be targeted and stimulated.

“Tactile imaging is the underlying principle of all energy work and development systems, although it is never explained this way. Grasping this is key to success or failure with any energy work system. A major goal of this book is to make the principles of energy work understandable and accessible.”

How Tactile Imaging Affects the Physical and Energy Bodies

“The focus of body awareness attention in any part of the physical body—say in the hand—causes the nerves in that hand to charge up and prepare for physical movement. If movement does not occur—if the focal point of body awareness continually shifts as tactile imaging actions are performed—these nerves discharge. So, when body awareness is brushed back and forth through the hand, the nerves there are continually charging and discharging. This increases bioelectrical activity and causes some unusual physical sensations.

“The bioelectrical activity caused by tactile imaging actions in the physical body cause a corresponding biomagnetic disturbance in the substance of the energy body. This is like a subtle energy ripple wave effect. The intensity and motion of this subtle wave varies according to the location and intensity of the tactile imaging action being performed. Some areas of the energy body, such as the hands and feet, are more sensitive than others. This relates partly to the density of nerves in the physical body and partly to subtle energy body structures sharing the same space.

“Tactile imaging actions can be performed on the surface of the physical body, deep inside the physical body, or even

outside the physical body. They can also be extended further out to affect the energy bodies of other persons.

“Tactile imaging causes some unusual physical sensations. While the type and intensity vary from person to person, the most common include feelings of tightness, heaviness, fuzziness, thickness, tingling, buzzing, fluttering, fizzing, mild cramping, and warm or cool sensations. Again, these sensations are caused by increased energy movement stimulation nerves in the physical body.

“Strong energy movement-related physical sensations are common for beginners, especially during the first few weeks of energy work. These sensations will always abate with practice, as the energy body and the nerves of the physical body adapt to higher levels of energy movement and bioelectrical activity.

“Little or no sensation during early energy work can indicate three things: a healthy or already well-developed energy body, or a sluggish energy body with energy blockages, or ineffective tactile imaging actions. Out of thousands of people I have taught this energy work to, I have come across only a very small group of people who felt no sensations. However, in all cases where people persevere with energy work, the energy body eventually responds and produces normal energy sensation.”

Practice

“The following simple exercises show how to focus body awareness in different part of your body. This is essential body training for tactile imaging.

“To prepare yourself, sit in a chair with your shoes off and do not cross your legs. Eliminate distractions like music,

tight clothing, et cetera. Close your eyes, take a few deep breaths to settle yourself, and begin. Lightly rub or scratch the specified areas of your body as necessary. Use a pen or ruler for this if you cannot reach. This helps target specific areas so that body awareness can be focused more accurately. The scratching and rubbing method of targeting is discontinued later.

“Key Point: When you focus on any area of your body, it helps if you imagine that you are trying to feel slight changes in air temperature and air movement there.

“Rub or lightly scratch your left kneecap, causing a mild tingling to help target this with your body awareness. Feel for this tingling area with your body awareness, with our sense of touch and feel. Feel for more of your knee and become aware of it as a joint. Feel around it, on the sides and back, and then move your point of body awareness around it several times, as if bandaging your knee. Your center of body awareness is now focused entirely in your left knee.

“Shift your point of body awareness slowly down your left leg to your big toe. Scratch or wiggle the toe a bit to help target it so you can focus your body awareness there. Feel its outline and shape with our bodily awareness. Move your body awareness back and forth through the big toe and continue this for one minute.

“Shift your point of body awareness to your right knee, lightly rubbing or scratching it first to highlight it, and then repeat the above knee exercise. Then slowly move your point of body awareness down your leg and repeat the big toe exercise.

“Repeat the above exercise with your left elbow joint and left thumb, and then your right elbow joint and right thumb.

“Move your point of body awareness to several other parts of your body, anywhere you like, focusing on one part at a time. Feel your point of awareness moving over your body as you do this. Remember to feel each area as if trying to detect slight changes in air movement and air temperature there.

“You have just moved your center of body awareness all around your body, targeting and focusing your body awareness in many parts. You also stimulated your energy body as your center of body awareness moved through your energy body.” (pp. 19-22)

Robert’s book continues with wonderful insights on how to do energy work and why. He teaches how to create an “energy ball” and use that to run through your body to clear blockages, etc. I highly recommend reading and using it as a guide in beginning energy work. It is because of reading his book, attending energy workshops such as spoon bending, that I was able to do energy work on Kitten when the Lord asked me to. I had practiced often. Many mornings in the winter I will get up and build a fire in the stove and then sit near it. While there I clear my mind, meditate, do breathing techniques, and especially run an energy ball up and down my Chakras to clear them and get them flowing in the right direction. I take time to attune my spiritual energy body to be ready for the day and whatever the Lord brings my direction. I can’t say enough that we need to become aware of ourselves and what is around us on all levels.

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

“In days gone by, thank goodness, Doug loved to ‘play’ with those energy balls to see who could sense when one was tossed at them. It was amazing how many totally missed what he was

doing. He was a real distraction to some. It was like having someone throw a gob of a gooey substance at some part of the anatomy. His aim was rather bad. Ever have someone throw a balloon filled with watery mud and have it hit your face, head, back, etc.? Agreed, he was 'practicing' in a fun manner. However, to the highly sensitive that pesky balloon stung! A shield kept most out until he figured out how to change the frequency and slowed the projected velocity. It was back to the sneak up and whack! He had great fun. Those who felt the distinct impact of his balloons learned, very quickly, to set up a shield against any and all of his pranks.

"Others began to throw the energy balloons at other people with varying results. Most felt nothing while others felt something. A few felt the distinct smack. What was even more entertaining was watching the various colored orbs being lobbed around. Some were quite bright with a single color while others were of several colors. Doug's pesky orbs began as a single, rather dark, orb then advanced to multicolored ones.

"It is amazing to see the various colors and sizes of energy balls people move up and down on their own bodies. What most do not understand is if the color(s) were dull and rather dark, they complained there was little to no sensation. That is like hauling a ball of lead to the battery store and asking them to charge it so you can put it into the car to start it. Not going to happen. When the energy ball is full of light, pulsing, various bright colors or a single bright color, those working with them felt considerable charges moving along their bodies as a result. The dark low-level frequency energy will actually deplete someone. It is best to become conscious of which kind you are working with before throwing it at someone else!"

More Understanding:

Meditation is an important aspect of becoming aware of ourselves and looking inside ourselves. It opens up what some call “altered states” or what I would call a spiritual state of being. For that reason I am going to cover a few basic ideas about meditation. There are many adult education classes that teach these things and I would recommend them, along with discernment. As in all things, the Adversary has his finger in this pie, too.

There are many benefits to meditation. Some of the scientifically demonstrated benefits are: it changes and activates parts of the brain associated with creativity, planning, and emotions; improves attention and focus on tasks; improves sensitivity, specifically in vision; improves the immune system; reduces pain; reduces stress; reduces anxiety; improves skin disorders; increases love and compassion; and is a powerful tool to fight off depression. And best of all, meditation is free, with no harmful side effects, and no doctor is needed.

The first thing one needs to do in meditation is to set the stage. For most this should be obvious but isn't. No television, no radio or iPod, no telephone—turn the thing off, and eliminate any other distractions. The world can live without being able to contact you for thirty minutes.

After getting rid of the distractions, it is important to get comfortable. I don't do the “Yoga” thing, it isn't comfortable for me. I like being next to the wood burning stove with a fan going and my back against the sofa. I will sit cross legged and put my palms up, which makes it easier for me to feel energy. A recliner tipped half-way back would be awesome. Loose clothing is a must. It is most important to eliminate distractions. That is why I get up early to do mine, no phones, no children, no spouse, no distractions, period.

Now you are ready to dump mental distractions. One way to do this is to imagine that you have a large box with a heavy lid

or even a hole in the ground. It can look like anything at all—use your imagination. At the start of your meditation, mentally put into the box or hole a symbol of anything that might distract you during your meditation. For example, if you have an appointment that day, put it in, bills to pay, put them in. Also you might consider putting in your checkbook or credit cards. Put in any issues with others at home or work, put your business cards or your husband's card in the box or hole.

Once all of your distractions are in, close the lid or put a lid over the hole in the ground. Then mentally turn your back or thoughts to that box and walk away from it. Just know there is no need to worry; it will all be there when you are done.

If during your mediation you are distracted, open the lid and put a symbol of that distraction in there. You should never place a person or animal in your box or the hole. Instead, put a symbol of them into it.

While meditating it is important to do what is called "Pranic Breathing." Kitten would teach this at our workshops and many wondered why. It is a great way to super-oxygenate every cell in your body, and especially the pineal gland which has the second largest blood flow of all the organs in the body. Maureen Caudill taught this concept at one of our energy workshops.

- Start by exhaling your breath completely through your mouth, but softly, like you were blowing out a small candle.
- Now breathe in through your nose to a very slow, steady count of four. (When you get used to it, you can lengthen that to a count of six and up from there.) The goal is to bring a slow, steady, measure of air deep into your lungs. No deep gasps or sudden intakes. Just a slow, steady inhalation that is fully under your control.

- When you get to the count of four, hold your breath for just one more count.
- Now start your exhalation through your mouth. Again, make it a slow, steady release of breath to the count of four.
- When you reach four and your exhalation is finished, pause again for one beat. Then repeat the cycle.
- The point is to do this in a steady rhythm, mentally counting SLOWLY to four for each inhalation and exhalation, and pausing for one beat between each.

The point is a slow, steady stream of air flowing in and out under control. It is important to mentally count one-two-three-four. You will eventually be able to build up until you can count up to thirty or more counts with each inhalation and exhalation. That takes a lot of practice! Breathing is an important part of meditation.

Meditation, breathing, and running energy all take consistent daily practice. Do this before reading your scriptures and see what happens. Before workshops Kitten would place a large ball of energy up at the ceiling over the workshop attendees. She would have it rotate at the right rate, with the proper frequency and right colors, all of which would help raise the frequency of the attendees. If our frequency or spirituality is higher, we are then able to understand things of a higher nature or frequency. Makes sense, doesn't it? We just didn't tell many people about this energy ball until later on in the workshops because some of the attendees wanted to "help" with it and would cause it to stop working properly.

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

“A good portion of meditation is learning self-control. The majority of the world’s population have little or no control of their thoughts, emotions, or actions. Consciously regulating breathing, regulating thoughts, and taking control of our own emotions are all very important parts of meditation. So in order to meditate, we must calm our minds, calm our emotions, and actually take control of ourselves. The breathing exercises assist greatly in this area. The combination of breathing exercises, meditation, and working with the energy balls raises a person’s frequency to the point they are able to perform many things that the world declares are of the devil. Those of darkness are going to do everything they can to stop those who seek for light. Labels and negative connotations work wonders to stop people from learning these important, lifesaving skills. By being consistent with the breathing, meditation, and energy, it is very possible to rise in physical frequency to the point those who are seeking to destroy any and all forms of light, the people of the general world, are no longer able to visually see those who are working in the light of Christ. Oh yes, when you are working with the bright energy balls, you are working with the light of Christ.

“As commanded, for the several years of the various workshops, because so many of the people attending them were of a much lower frequency and were unable to hear what was spoken, a huge, specialized, disk of a particular frequency, color, size, density, and speed had to be activated above everyone which automatically raised their frequency. That disk was never exactly identical for each workshop. Each one was called into being and activated at a specific composition according to what our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, commanded. People who

thought that they were assisting were in reality causing considerable disruption. The high-pitched singing would suddenly change and the colors would drop. Therefore the energy disk had to be protected from those who believed that they knew better than our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ,. Invariably people began to mention how very warm the room had become. A number actually enjoyed the warmth. Others of the lower frequency complained they were becoming too hot. It would've helped if they'd allowed that energy to truly penetrate, then they would have discovered the warmth was actually quite pleasant.

“One of the things the Scriptures teaches is when our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, returns to this Earth, those who are unprepared will be **burned** at His coming. In 2 Peter 3:10-13 (ASB) we read:

But the day of the Lord will come like a thief, in which the heavens will pass away with a roar and the elements will be destroyed with intense heat, and the earth and its works will be burned up. Since all these things are to be destroyed in this way, what sort of people ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness, looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens will be destroyed by burning, and the elements will melt with intense heat! But according to His promise we are looking for new heavens and a new earth, in which righteousness dwells.

“Again in D&C 101:24-25 we read this:

And every corruptible thing, both of man, or of the beasts of the field, or of the fowls of the heavens, or of the fish of the sea, that dwells upon all the face of the earth, shall be consumed. And also that element shall melt with fervent heat; and all things shall become new, that my knowledge

and glory may dwell upon all the earth.

“Therefore, we learn from these scriptures that the light He carries within His own body is quite brilliant and extraordinarily hot. Those who cannot stand the heat, either must learn to raise their frequency so that they are comfortable in the Lord’s heat or they will have to find a nice deep, dark, cold cave to hide in.”

*And they shall go into the holes of the rocks, and into the caves of the earth, for fear of the Lord, and for the glory of his majesty, when he ariseth to shake terribly the earth.
(Isaiah 2:19)*

Chapter 7

ENERGY, CHAKRAS AND MEDITATION

While talking about energy in the chapter on “Spoon Bending,” I mentioned chakras and the importance of keeping them in balance. Over the years I have done many workshops in which I would ask the participants if they knew what an “aura” or a “chakra” was. Most of them have heard about the aura, the energy field that surrounds our body, but it has amazed me how many have never heard of chakras or if they have, they don’t know anything about them. Generally, in the “Christian” world chakras are considered evil and false ideas generated by the Eastern religions of the world, and believing in such things is considered denying Jesus Christ and therefore, going to hell. Also information about the third eye, meditation, energy work, and Mormons, among other things, tend to be placed in the “evil” category. I guess I was blessed to learn about these things from our sighted daughter, so I didn’t know just how “evil” all of it is. How sad it is to learn how many of us limit what God wants to share with us and help us to understand. What did Joseph Smith say about members flying apart like glass when presented with anything new? Through my daughter, other gifted people, and my own experiences I have been wonderfully taught in the Lord’s education system. Because of this, I have been exposed to many things that I otherwise might not have learned. For example, some are able to see the energies of the human body, and I have learned that we are made up of

light, trillions of photons in all of our DNA. We are energy beings, vibrating at different frequencies. Those of a dark nature vibrate at a very low frequency, while those of Light vibrate at a higher frequency. Why would any Christian declare it is evil to believe we have chakras, which are nothing but energy centers located on our body? Why don't we study things like our auric field in mainstream science? There is much, much more to learn than we now know!

We mentioned in our first book, *My Peace I Give Unto You*, that when Denise came out of the hospital, the first thing we found out was that she could see our aura or the auric field. That fascinated me, so I took her places where we could watch people, and she would tell me the colors of their aura. We discovered that our consciousness, our experience of Being, or what we really are is just energy. Some call this "Life Energy." This energy does not exist in only our brain; it fills our entire body. Anger, for example, causes an energy imbalance and changes the aura to red. Eventually Denise could tell a person's mood, or way of being, by just looking at the person's aura. That is because our consciousness is connected to every cell in our body. Through our energy or consciousness, we can communicate with every organ and every tissue in our body. The health of that organ or tissue will manifest in our energy field or aura. The sighted can see this. Back in the days when we did the Ezekiel seminars, I was introduced to a man and woman that did Kirlian photography. Our consciousness or energy is usually in some form of balance or imbalance, which can be measured in Kirlian photography. (The energy which is our consciousness and which reflects our consciousness, can be measured by this photographic process.) They came to the seminars and took photographs with their Kirlian photographic camera. It was awesome to see people's energy and how different it was for everyone, according to the condition and patterning of the energy field.

When a Kirlian photograph is taken of your hand, it shows a certain pattern of energy. Then when you send love and energy to someone else and a second picture is taken, there will be a different pattern of energy shown on the Kirlian photograph. In this way we can see that a change in the consciousness creates a change in the auric energy field that is being photographed.

My friend had taken thousands of pictures and “read” them for the people. Because they have taken so many photographs, he and his wife have been able to quantify that when there are “holes” in particular parts of the energy field, they know they correspond to particular weaknesses in specific parts of the body. The amazing thing was that the weakness shows up in the energy field before there is ever any evidence of it on the physical level. A good example of this was when he took my photograph, he saw a “bar” over my chest. He said he’d seen that three times before, and all three had later died of heart attacks. He suggested I see a doctor immediately. I went for medical help, and he was right—I had major heart problems. I was treated alternatively and over the next year the problem went away.

What this portends is amazing. It clearly shows us how things are manifested on the physical level.

1. A change of consciousness (usually emotional energy of some sort) creates a change in the energy field. Denise and I would see a mother get a little upset at her child, then see her aura go red in color, and then she’d display anger.
2. A change in the energy field occurs before a change in the physical body.
3. The direction of manifestation is from consciousness through the energy field to the physical body. Simply put, we become what we put conscious-

ness to or think about. Be careful what you declare!

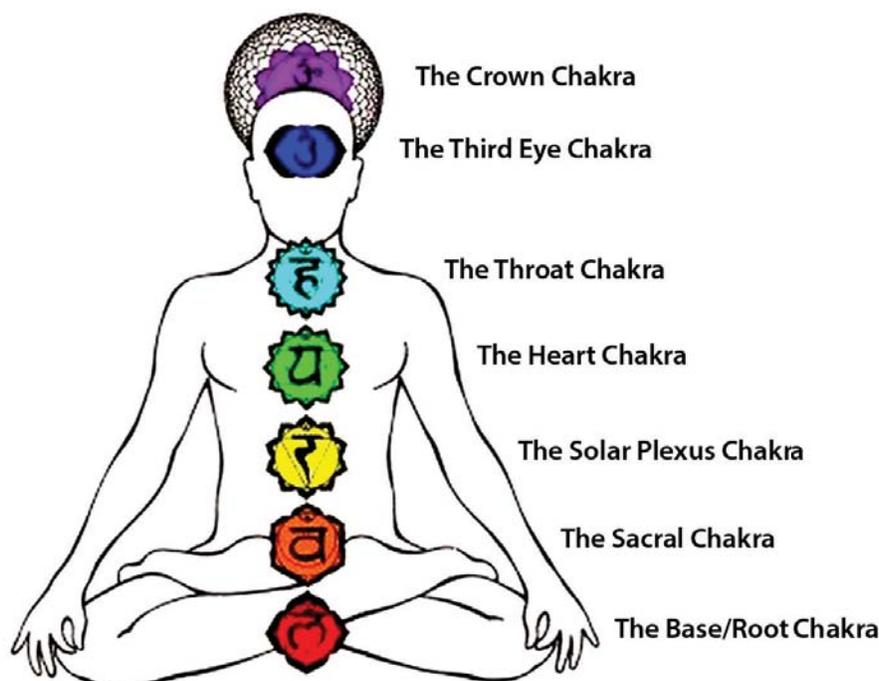
All of this has been plainly described in the first volume of *I See...Awake*. We can see that it is not the physical body creating the energy field, the aura, but rather the aura or energy field that is creating the physical body. What we see as the physical body is the end result of a process that begins with the consciousness. And if our consciousness is out of balance, that can result in physical distress or problems.

If we make a decision or an action that leaves us with stress, it can create an energy blockage with sufficient intensity to create a symptom on the physical level. If we sin against our God or His laws, that can create an energy blockage allowing dark entities to enter into us or upon us. It also allows all kinds of negative creations to impact our energy field and therefore our physical, mental, spiritual, and etheric bodies. Typically the symptom speaks a certain language which reflects the idea that we each create our own reality. When the symptom is described from that point of view, the metaphoric significance of the symptom becomes clear. In other words, when someone comes around that you don't like, and you make the statement, "That guy is a pain in the butt," don't be surprised when you develop problems in your posterior, especially when "that guy" is around you a lot. Remember your subconscious mind will give you what your conscious mind declares, especially when done with emotion. "That guy is a huge pain in the ... !!!" You've just sent your subconscious a serious mandate to give your posterior a large dose of pain, haven't you?

There are no accidents or coincidences. Things happen here on earth and in the heavens according to pattern and order. God has set his natural laws, and we need to understand them, or others will use those laws to influence and maintain control over us. It is being done to all of us continually.

Besides our auric field that surrounds our body, we also have other energy centers. The energy centers that my daughter sees and others have described to me are our chakras.

To begin with, there are seven basic chakras. These energy centers are real; there is color associated with them that the gifted see. There are many minor chakras throughout our body, but here is where the seven basic chakras are located:



Ancient Hindu traditions have been studying energy consciousness for thousands of years, and they have mapped out the consciousness of the body using the language of the chakras. Chakra is a Sanskrit word which means “wheel,” or “vortex,” because that is what it looks like energetically. Each chakra interpenetrates the physical body with the energy the same way a magnetic field can interpenetrate or permeate the physical body.

A good friend did a workshop for me several years ago and handed out a paper that in part discussed the human chakras. This is part of what he shared:

“The chakras are not physical. They are aspects of consciousness in the same way that the auras are aspects of consciousness. The chakras are more dense than the auras, but not as dense as the physical body, but they interact with the physical body through two major vehicles, the endocrine system and the nervous system. Each of the seven chakras is associated with one of the seven endocrine glands, and also with a particular group of nerves called a plexus. Thus, each chakra can be associated with particular parts of the body and particular functions within the body controlled by that plexus or that endocrine gland associated with that chakra.

“Your consciousness, your experience of being, represents everything it is possible for you to experience. All of your senses, all of your perceptions, all of your possible states of awareness can be divided into seven categories, and each of these categories can be associated with a particular chakra. Thus, the chakras represent not only particular parts of your physical body, but also particular parts of your consciousness. When you feel tension in your consciousness, you feel it in the chakra associated with the part of your consciousness experiencing the stress, and in the parts of the physical body associated with that chakra. Where you feel the stress depends therefore on why you feel the stress. When someone is hurt in a relationship, they feel it in their heart. When someone is nervous, their legs tremble and the bladder becomes weak.”

There have been times when I just haven't been able to get myself together, when I just felt "off." My innate curiosity makes me want to understand these things at a spiritual level, so in the past I would ask my daughter to take a look at my energy and tell me what was out of balance. Many times she would tell me

that one or more of my chakras was “spinning the wrong direction.” Chakras usually spin clockwise. When mine are blocked with energetic problems or whatever, they will spin counterclockwise or not spin at all. To correct the problem I will create an energy ball, as described in the chapter on “Spoon Bending” and spin it clockwise at that chakra point. Then I will actually take that spinning ball of energy—going clockwise of course—and run it up and down all my chakras. There is a column that goes from one chakra to the next. That is where I run the energy. It really does clear me and make me feel better to have all seven of my energy centers, chakras, flowing in the proper direction and clear of “junk.”

There is a cartoon series called “The Last Airbender” that explains this quite well. The master is teaching the young student about chakras and explains that the different chakra centers are like pools of water in a stream. The water swirls around in the pools. The chakras do the same thing in our body; they are pools of swirling energy. When flowing properly, the water goes from one pool down to the next. If debris gets in the water and stops its flow, the pool can become “dammed” up and not flow properly. Our chakras are like that, swirling pools of energy, and if one or more has debris they become “dammed” up and don’t flow properly. He goes on to explain the seven different chakras.

1. Crown Chakra – Thought Chakra – this is at the crown of the head. It deals with spirit and is blocked by earthly attachment.
2. Third Eye Chakra – Light Chakra – this is located at the center of the forehead. It deals with insight and is blocked by illusion, the illusion of separation.
3. Throat Chakra – Sound Chakra – located in the

throat. It deals with truth and is blocked by lies, especially the ones we tell ourselves.

4. Heart Chakra – Heart Chakra – located in the heart. It deals with love and is blocked by grief, sadness, and loss.
5. Solar Plexus Chakra – Fire Chakra – located in the stomach area. This is our will and power. It is blocked by shame and disappointments.
6. Sacral Chakra – Water Chakra – located over the sexual organs. Deals with pleasure and is blocked by guilt and blame.
7. Base/Root Chakra – Earth Chakra – located at the base of the spine and is blocked by fear.

Of course there are many explanations about Chakras, their meanings, and how to release what is there. That is beyond the scope of this work and will require some personal study.

(The best website I have found to learn about chakras is www.chakraenergy.com.)

Having our energy centers cleared is part of the process of having complete control and awareness of all of our thoughts and actions. It is part of the overall physical, mental, spiritual, and ethereal health of our bodies. As with all things, it is important to ask our Father's permission and use discernment. I enjoy looking at any modality I can as long as I get permission. Then I will try to apply the gospel of Jesus Christ to what I am seeing or learning.

A good example of this is with the seven Chakras. Before they changed the LDS temple endowment in the initiatory, it actually paralleled the chakras. For those old enough to remember the seven chakras were symbolically washed and anointed with oil along with the feet, arms, hands, and back. I do believe that if

it was done with true authority and faith that would be a great way to clear them. Do you think that might have been one of the reasons the Lord instituted that practice in the temple?

The last part of this chapter is on meditation. Over the years I have been amazed how many LDS believe that it is evil to meditate. I suppose they equate it with eastern mysticism or the New Age movement. I know the Christian community wants nothing to do with it. It makes me wonder because when my daughter was in her coma and saw all the life of our Savior Jesus Christ, she reported the He always went away and “re-charged” Himself. One of the things He did was to meditate. Now I never asked if He assumed the “Lotus” position and said “Ohm” or not. But what if He did? The idea is to connect with God, clear ourselves, and charge up our own spiritual battery.

We have learned from much study, trial, and error many things that help with our connection to God. Years ago the Spirit told me to do a workshop on meditation. In my naiveté I wondered what good that would do as my legs go to sleep when I sit cross legged, my beard was too short, and I didn’t want to put anything on my head. Besides I didn’t know any “gurus.” So I checked around and found an LDS man that taught meditation. Wow, I thought, he must really be ostracized in his congregation. His name is Philip McLemore. We invited him come and present twice. What a joy he was. I learned that you don’t have to be from an “eastern” religion to benefit from meditation. Besides, if it was good enough for my Christ, there probably were benefits in it for all of us, don’t you think?

LDS Church President David O. McKay said:

“Spirituality...is the consciousness of victory over self and of communion with the Infinite.

“In our worship there are two elements: One is spiritual communion arising from our own meditation; the other,

instruction from others...Of the two, the more profitable... is meditation. Meditation is one of the most secret, most sacred doors through which we pass into the presence of the Lord.” (Conference Report, April 1967, p.85)

Wow, after that statement I guess all discussion about the efficacy of meditation should end, especially after reading that last sentence. Our friend Phil added to what President McKay said:

“A technique and process designed to take one through and beyond the slavery of conditioned perceptions, thoughts, emotions, and behaviors to the experience of pure Spirit. Bathed and nourished in Spirit, one is transformed as the Divine qualities deep in one’s soul unfold and permeate every aspect of one’s being, activities, and relationships. Then the power and ability to make choices in harmony with the nature of God becomes the normal and natural state of being.” (Philip McLemore)

When God declared in Psalm 46:10, *“Be still and know that I am God,”* I believe he was talking about getting ourselves into a meditative state and coming to know Him while there. The idea is to get ourselves to a higher spiritual frequency, isn’t it? When we watch TV, we take ourselves into a hypnogogic state where our brain’s frequency is lowered by the “flicker rate” of the screen. That make us completely programmable. (They are called television *programs*, after all.) Meditation increases your spiritual frequency instead of deadening it. It’s good to get rid of the world and enter a contemplative or meditative state and “commune” with God. It is an individual journey and requires us to go “within” to find Him. Didn’t the Lord tell us that we are to *“seek first the kingdom of God”* (Matt. 6:33) and *“...for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.”* (Luke 17:21) It might be important to learn to turn within and seek Him and His Kingdom.

In our workshops Kitten taught what it is called “Meditative Breathing.” Sit in a relaxed position with your hands to your sides with the palms up. Inhale through the mouth while counting slowly to six, hold to a count of four to six, then exhale slowly to a count of six. Do this for five minutes, working your way up to twenty minutes. You can also work up to a count of 12, 16, 32, 40, and 60. That may take a bit of time. As you are doing this, feel the breath of life, light, and love enter you being.

While doing my meditation I will think of spiritual mantras at times. Things like “God is Love,” “Thy will be done,” and “Peace be still.” Most of the time I play a Solfeggio frequency the entire time, as that will automatically increase my spiritual frequency. But mainly it’s about getting into a safe, quiet place and going inside. Doing so will improve all aspect of our lives.

By doing the breathing along with the meditation, we super oxygenate our cells. A few short minutes of breathing like that will put a lot of oxygen in all the cells of our body, especially in the spiritual centers like the pineal gland. This is quite important as it helps our physical, mental, and spiritual health.

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

“Only someone of evil will use derogatory names (apostate, devilish, Fundamentalist, paganistic, etc.) and assorted fear mongering tactics to stop others from learning about something they are afraid of. It is amazing how many ‘religious’ leaders are actually all but terrified of seeing God, our Savior Jesus Christ or even a messenger of God, a.k.a. an angel. Those who actually believe in our Savior will encourage others to seek knowledge no matter where it is, under the guidance of Jesus Christ and His spirit of love.

“If you have been truthful, you will know and see that you

have areas that you can improve in your life. This is the first step in accepting you at this moment in time. The next step is to start doing things to manifest more energy in the chakra center(s) that needs more recognition. Don't be concerned if all of your centers need work. Most people do not understand their chakras 100%, but that's why we are here...to learn and to grow!

“You also have to understand that in order to become a specialist in a field, you must study, do research, and complete practical experiments. Think of your seven chakra centers as different school subjects. Maybe some classes you aced but others you just passed or maybe even failed. If you did not go to class, listen to the teacher, or study for the final exam, your final grades will definitely be affected! However, if you learned the material you probably achieved top grades.

“It is the same with your chakra centers. How do you expect to have an understanding of your chakra centers if you've never even taken a class in the chakra system? Consider that our chakras are our life subjects. Each chakra center is connected to a level of intelligence that is part of our whole being.”

From www.chakraenergy.com:

- The Root Chakra is our life force energy. It is also called our Red or Base Center.
- The Spleen Chakra is our sensing and feeling energy. It is also called our Orange or Splenic Center.
- The Solar Plexus Chakra is our mental energy. It is also called our Yellow or Ego Center.
- The Heart Chakra is our emotional energy. It is also called our Green or Cardiac Center.

- The Throat Chakra is our communication energy. It is also called our Blue or Laryngeal Center.
- The Brow Chakra is our intuitive energy. It is also called our Indigo or Third-Eye Center.
- The Crown Chakra is our inspiration and spiritual energy. It is also called our Violet or Coronal Center.

Now that you understand the basics of each chakra and the color vibration it correlates to, you can begin to work with “tools” that will help energize the chakra center(s) you need to work on. The main tool I ask people to work with is the “right” (positive) thoughts. If you already have doubts or disbelief, your end results will be affected.

Your thoughts are mainly what drive you on a physical level. It is your mind that tells you what to do, what you should learn, and how you should act or react. This is why, first and foremost, you need to put the power of your mind into the thought that you are going to work at increasing your chakra system’s vitality. It is simply by acknowledging this that you have taken the first step to empowering your chakras. Congratulations!

How Thought Affects our Chakra Energy.

You must learn that with every thought there is a reaction. This response can either energize you or decrease your life force. For example, when you have a negative thought:

Brain: Negative thoughts cause the electricity of the brain to change.

Meridian: Due to the change of the brain electricity, the meridian energy changes.

Organ: The organs connected with the meridian are not properly nourished with vital energy and disease develops.

Chakra: The astral energy feedback changes in the chakra due to the bad thought. This thought has less vitality as it is out of the cosmic tune. A block in the chakra occurs.

Aura: Negative thinking drains away the energy of the aura. The colors become dull and the auric protection shield weakens. Negativity from the outside can pour in.

Law of Resonance: When negative thoughts are radiated to the environment, all thoughts on that morphogenetic field will be attracted. The negativity becomes stronger and happens more often.

Negative thoughts are against the Godly plan of loving. Bad life conditions will be attracted.

Every day we stimulate our chakra centers in one way or another, for example, through the different thoughts we have or physically through our senses. Daily we energize our centers, consciously or unconsciously, through various methods. Following is a list of common ways we charge our chakra centers:

Thoughts

Thought is an energy form. Science has proven a positive thought allows our energy to flow freely and unrestricted. Whereas, negative thoughts decrease energy within our body. Every thought (whether mental or emotional) is connected to a chakra. For example, a passionate thought is a red energy stimulant, but an angry thought decreases one's positive red energy flow. This means that continual angry thoughts will lower your root chakra's energy.

The Sun

This is our most important energy source. Through light, all the seven color energies flow from the sun's rays to the earth. People, animals, plants, minerals, water and our chakras receive energy from the sun's light. (If you are not able to enjoy

the sun for a few hours daily, add a quality full spectrum light bulb to a light source in your work area or in a lamp at home.)

Food

When the sun's rays bless all plant life, it gives the plant life energy. Once the plant absorbs energy, the color energy that remains is the energy of that fruit, vegetable or flower. Without this energy our body could not assimilate the nutritional value of the food. Balance your chakras daily by eating foods that contain each of the seven color energies (that's why the doctor always said to eat a plate of different colored foods... for the color value!).

Visualization

Meditation & Breathing (Yoga). Since thought is an energy form you can stimulate your chakra centers through meditation, visualization or breathing energy into your various chakra centers. By adding the color, intention adds additional power from a chakra's vibration.

Gems/Minerals

Gemstones and minerals are also energy forms. For example, crystals contain a similar crystalline structure as the human body. Crystals amplify energy and can be programmed (e.g. computer chips and watches). Wearing gemstone jewelry or placing gemstones and minerals in your environment is a simple way to absorb the stone or mineral's healing vibrations.

Color Bathing

(One of my favorites!) Water is a conductor of energy and color is an energy. While lying in the colored water your body absorbs the vibrational frequency from the color. Take the time to give back to your body and soul! While bathing, balance that chakra by thinking about what you would like to achieve from that specific energy and maybe add the correlating aromather-

apy oil. Do not use chemical food coloring to dye your water. I recommend Colour Bath™ by Colour Energy Corporation, as it is totally organic and therefore safe to use.

Aromatherapy

Essential oils are the pure essence of the plant or flower. Every oil has a vibration that correlates to a color. Oils contain the healing properties of herbs, flowers or plants. Use only therapeutic quality oils (inexpensive oils may contain toxins). Also never apply oils directly on your skin (dilute with a carrier oil or in a bath).

Music & Dance

Music affects us in a positive or negative way. Every musical note corresponds to a color and chakra center. Certain sounds can stimulate an emotional, mental, physical or spiritual response. e.g. Listening or dancing to primal music, such as the beating of drums, can energize your physical body and stimulate your root chakra.

Toning & Sounds

We can vocally make sounds to vibrate at the same frequency as various organs in our body. Regular toning can help keep our body's organs functioning properly. Noise pollution can be very disturbing to our environment. Surround yourself with sounds, which make you happy and productive!

Color Tonations

By shining of light through various color filters directly onto the body, the vibration of the color will be absorbed through your skin affecting the designated area.

Solarized Water

Charge water by filling a colored glass with water or by placing a colored filter in front of a glass of water and let the sun's

rays kiss the water with color energy. Make sure the glass is not leaded and of a clean color hue.

Syntonics

Is the use of color through the eyes. Via our eyes, color stimulates our pituitary gland which in turn releases hormones connected to the correlating organ of the same frequency. Therapeutic eye glasses that are manufactured with various colored filters can be simply worn whenever you need a boost of a certain color or chakra energy. Make sure the color eyeglasses are 100% UVA & UVB coated if wearing outdoors and again the exact color tint of the lens is very, very important. Note: Unless the color glass manufacturer or distributor is aware of color therapy, chances are their colored lenses are not made for healing purposes.

Decor

Use colors consciously in your home or work environment to give you more positive and productive energy. Paint a room or add different colored pillows, artwork, carpets, etc.

Clothing

What we wear will influence our mood, mind and energy level. Light penetrates through our clothing amplifying the color energy we are wearing. The more vibrant the clothing the better the energy transfer.

Art and Color

Art and color can be used as an outlet to either express or stimulate. Surround yourself with the colors, which are suitable for what you need to accomplish in that area. Use calming colors in your bedroom and mentally stimulating colors in your workspace.

Why is it Important for me to learn about my Chakras?

The following information is for you to do a self-analysis to help you increase the energy centers that you rated lowest in. By understanding what thoughts or issues may cause a chakra to stagnate (not develop fully) is key in helping you gain more self-knowledge.

The statements below are to help you in your own self-analysis. These questions are for you to reflect on and if you feel that you may be having problems in certain areas then try bringing in color through different methods.

Part One

These questions are connected to your Red Root chakra power.

The Root chakra is your main power station and it is connected to your physical vitality and endurance, mental perseverance and it is the center that gives you your life's passion. The root center is also your connection to your existence.

Issues to review are:

- Are you physically fit?
- Was there or is there currently any abuse (physical or verbal) in your life?
- Are you able to put your thoughts into action?
- Do you accomplish most of your goals?
- Are money and a home very important to you?
- Have you had any recent thoughts of self-destruction?

Ways to bring in the RED energy and boost your Root chakra power are:

- Incorporate physical activities such as an exercise program or yoga.

- Eat red foods and consume red drinks.
- Use aromatherapy oils such as sandalwood, ylang ylang or juniper (consult a specially trained aromatherapist or aura counselor to find the right oils for your specific chakra needs). Note: Every therapeutic oil or essence has its own healing power that can help with specific issues relating to each chakra.
- Stimulating music with deep beats such as drums or music that makes your body move like Latin American music. (Many metaphysical outlets have diversified selections of chakra music.)
- Wear or carry a red gemstones. Red stones would be Red Tiger's Eye, Garnet, Red Jasper or Ruby.
- Bathe in the red color in your clothing, Color Bath™, decor, art, etc.

Part Two

These questions are connected to your Orange Spleen chakra power.

The Spleen chakra is your sensing power station, connecting you to your feeling sensitivities. It is the center that allows you to live consciously, in the “now.” The spleen center is also the link to your enthusiasm, happiness and joy—your inner-child.

Issues to review are:

- Are you emotionally stable or do your emotions go from one extreme to another?
- Do you try to hide or control your feelings?
- Is your inner child still alive, enthusiastic and uninhibited?

- Can you think outside of the box or is your creative perception restricted?
- Are your sexual relationships mutual and respectful, and can you be totally comfortable with your partner with no limitations such as frigidity or impotence?
- Do you feel disconnected from reality and do you have difficulty living in the present moment?

Ways to bring in the ORANGE energy and boost your Spleen chakra power are:

- Hot aromatic baths. Water aerobics. Deep tissue massage. Emotional movies. Cooking classes.

Embracing sensation (such as different food tastes).

- Eat orange foods and consume orange drinks.
- Use aromatherapy oils such as Melissa, Orange, Mandarin, Neroli, Tangerine.
- Music with a bounce or that flows (running water, thunderstorms, etc.). Harp.
- Wear or carry an orange gemstone or copper piece. Orange stones would be Coral or Carnelian.
- Bathe in the orange color in your clothing, Color Bath™, decor, art, etc.

Part Three

These questions are connected to your Yellow Solar Plexus chakra power.

The Yellow chakra is your mental awareness, which connects you to your mind power. It is the center that governs your ability to learn and comprehend. The solar plexus center is known

to govern your ego and your will power. It is the sun center that emits optimism and confidence.

Issues to review are:

- Are you too flexible and are your focus and concentration abilities poor?
- Do you lack confidence that you are overly concerned with what other people think?
- Are your thoughts clouded so that you have a difficult time making decisions?
- Do you take on too much responsibility because you think you know best?
- Are you a perfectionist and prefer to do things yourself?
- Are you afraid to be alone?

Ways to bring in the YELLOW energy and boost your Solar Plexus chakra power are:

- Taking classes, reading informative books, doing mind puzzles. Developing one's photographic memory. Sunshine. Detoxification programs.
- Eat yellow foods and consume yellow beverages.
- Use aromatherapy oils such as Rosemary, Lemon, Grapefruit, Bergamot.
- Music that is mentally stimulating such as chimes. Reed and Horn Instruments.
- Wear or carry a yellow gemstone or something gold. Yellow stones would be Citrine, Amber, Topaz.
- Bathe in the yellow color in your clothing, Color Bath™, decor, art, etc.

Part Four

These questions are connected to your Green Heart chakra power.

The Green chakra is your heart power station, connecting you to your emotions. It is the center that allows you to love and give unconditionally. The heart center governs your relationships. It is the energy center that integrates one's physical reality to one's spiritual connection.

Issues to review are:

- Do you accept yourself for who you are or do you lack self-love?
- Do you feel that you are not worthy of living life fully or do you feel stifled (feel a lack of freedom in your life)?
- Are you indecisive because you can't make up your mind?
- Do you have a hard time saying "no" to people?
- Do you have a fear of being rejected or abandoned?
- Are you envious and jealous of what other people have?

Ways to bring in the GREEN energy and boost your Heart chakra power are:

- Nature hikes. Spending time with family or friends. Surrounding yourself with plants. Gardening. Taking self-love courses. Reading romantic novels or watching romantic movies. Candlelight dinners.
- Eat green foods and consume green drinks.

- Use aromatherapy oils such as Eucalyptus, Pine, Tea Tree, Spearmint, Cedarwood.
- Music that has the sounds of nature.
- Wear or carry a green gemstone. Green stones would be Aventurine, Emerald, Jade, Malachite, Peridot.
- Bathe in the green color in your clothing, Color Bath™, decor, art, etc.

Part Five

These questions are connected to your Blue Throat chakra power.

The Blue chakra is your communication power station. It is the center that handles incoming and outgoing messages. It is through this center that we voice our opinions and our truths.

Issues to review are:

- Are you able to express yourself and your beliefs (voice your inner truth)?
- Do you have the ability to trust others without doubt?
- Do you have good organization and planning skills?
- Are you able to free yourself of old family values, beliefs and commitments especially regarding their relationship to responsibility?
- Are you concerned with financial security and having nice possessions?
- Are you shy and have difficulty communicating yourself or are you too talkative?

Ways to bring in the BLUE energy and boost your throat chakra power are:

- Singing (in the shower) and toning. Poetry, stamp or art collecting. Meaningful conversations. Taking self-development courses. Attending church or spiritual functions. Journaling. Neck and shoulder rolls.
- Eat blue foods and consume blue beverages.
- Use aromatherapy oils such as Geranium, Chamomile, Peppermint, Mint, Cypress.
- Music that is repetitive, such as echoes or sounds of ocean waves.
- Wear or carry a blue gemstone. Blue stones would be Sodalite, Lapis Lazuli, Sapphire, Blue Agate.
- Bathe in the blue color in your clothing, Color Bath™, decor, art, etc.

Part Six

These questions are connected to your Indigo Brow chakra power.

The Indigo chakra is your intuitive intelligence. It is the center that taps into the universal consciousness. Through the third-eye you can see things from a psychic potential.

Issues to review are:

- Do you trust your intuition and insights?
- Are you able to develop your psychic and intuitive abilities?
- Can you release your fears and anxieties or do you hang on to negative thoughts?

- Are you able to balance your imagination and fantasy realm with reality?
- Do you tend to feel lonely or are you often depressed?
- Are you unable to give yourself credit because you lack self-pride?

Ways to bring in the INDIGO energy and boost your Brow chakra power are:

- Star gazing. Eye rolls. Meditation. Developing one's intuition and psychic abilities.
- Eat indigo foods and consume indigo drinks.
- Use aromatherapy oils such as Patchouli, Frankincense, Myrrh.
- Music such as Mozart or Bach. Chanting (OM).
- Wear or carry an indigo gemstone or silver jewelry. Indigo stones are Amethyst, Tourmaline, Tanzanite.
- Bathe in the indigo color in your clothing, Color Bath™, decor, art, etc.

Part Seven

These questions are connected to your Violet Crown chakra power.

The Violet chakra is your spiritual connection. This chakra links you to the cosmos so you can reach your higher potential. It is the energy of knowingness and enlightenment.

Issues to review are:

- Are you dedicated to the Divine consciousness?
- Do you trust the universe and your spiritual reality?

- Are you able to equally balance your spirituality with your ability to stay grounded?
- Do you allow the universal energy to flow through you so that you have an unlimited creative energy source?
- Are you able to integrate your intuitive energy with your intellect—your feminine energy with your masculine energy?
- Do you lack faith because you prefer to believe in your own abilities?

Ways to bring in the VIOLET energy and boost your Crown chakra power are:

- Focusing on dreams and writing down one's visions and inventions. Quiet contemplation, meditation and yoga. Listening to guided meditation tapes. Taking spiritual courses.
- Eat violet foods and consume violet beverages.
- Use aromatherapy oils such as Lavender, Jasmine, Magnolia.
- Silence is the violet inspiration's music. Crystal Bowls.
- Wear or carry a violet gemstone. Violet stones would be Quartz Crystal, Diamond.
- Bathe in the violet color in your clothing, Color Bath™, decor, art, etc.

Recommended Reading:

ABC's of Chakra Therapy by Deedre Diemer

Chakra for Beginners by David Pond

Healing with Energy of the Chakras by Ambika Wauters

Pocket Guide to Chakras by Joy Gardner Gordon

The Truth About Chakras by Anodea Judith

Using Your Chakras: A New Approach to Healing Your Life by Ruth White

Wheels of Life: A User's Guide to the Chakra System by Anodea Judith

Please visit and share www.chakraenergy.com with enlightened friends.

From Kitten:

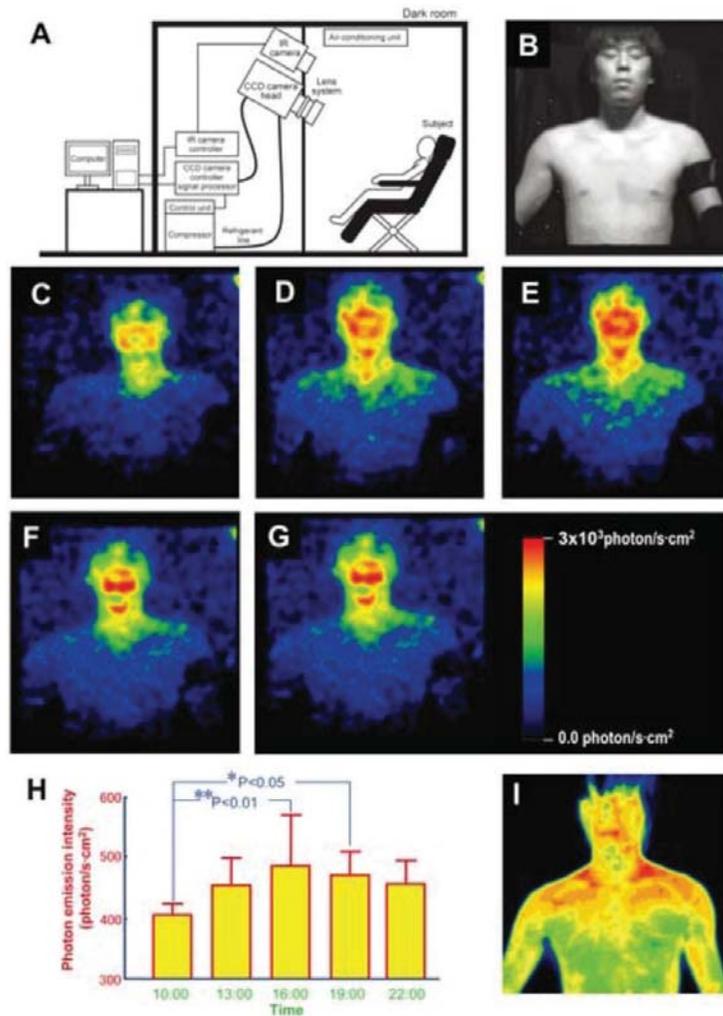
The Glowing Human Body

“Those who have taken the time and effort to balance the mind, body, and spirit which includes the Chakras, appear to have an unusual glow about them. The life energy is substantially stronger, brighter and the width from the body is greater. Those who are simply existing have surprisingly low amounts of life energy. Translated beings have put in the necessary effort to accomplish balancing all factors of their body. A mortal is able to acquire a surprising amount of ‘Healthy Glow’ via correct diet for them, meditation, prayer, good mental and emotional health and a true relationship with their God. There is a spiritual emanation from such Beings to the point others have the tendency to gravitate toward and associate with them. Our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, exhibited a visible glow which had the tendency of attracting others or caused fear, jealousy and resentment in others.

“Those who have learned to balance their entire (or are in process, thereof) being are surprised to discover they possess, heretofore, unknown abilities and gifts. The gifts and abilities

were simply lying dormant until there was sufficient energy to activate them. It does take time, effort, practice, prayer, meditation, being mindful of the Light above, and a heart of love, to achieve the level whereby others become aware of the literal light the body projects. Moses is one such who glowed to the point he had to cover his body to alleviate the distress experienced by those of a much lower mentality and spirituality.” (Exodus 34:29-35)

From the Tohoku Institute of Technology:



Here is a schematic illustration of an experimental setup that found that the human body, especially the face, emits visible light in small quantities that vary during the day. B is one of the test subjects. The other images show the weak emissions of visible light during totally dark conditions. The chart corresponds to the images and shows how the emissions varied during the day. The last image (I) is an infrared image of the subject showing heat emissions. Credit: Kyoto University; Tohoku Institute of Technology; PLoS ONE

Every living body is also surrounded by light, or energy.



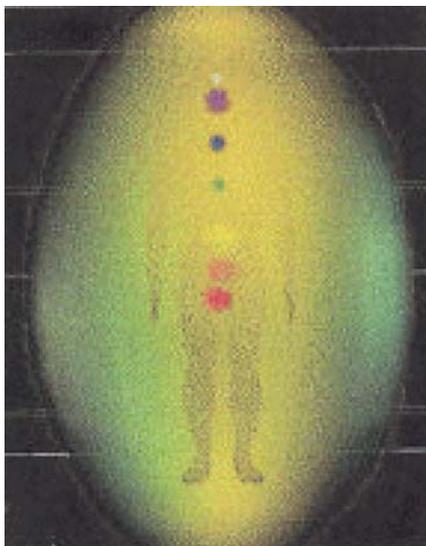
Normal, healthy, human auras are seen by those with the ability to see.

These are only some of the colors seen.

Hands of a healer via Kirlian Aura Capture.



AURA PHOTO WITH CHAKRA ACTIVITY



Aura and Chakra Photo of a person, taken with Advanced Kirlian Aura Capturing System.

“Earlier research has confirmed that your body emits light that is 1,000 times less intense than what your naked eyes are sensitive to. (Some people, however, are able to see this emitted light or ‘aura,’ and some can even distinguish colors.)

“The existence of the biophoton field was scientifically proven by Dr. Fritz-Albert Popp in 1974.

“Your physical health is dependent not only on what goes on inside of your body, but is also interconnected with and dependent on other non-physical levels of energy, such as the energy surrounding your body, called the biophoton field.

“In highly simplistic terms, your biophoton field can be viewed as a highly sophisticated computer that processes, stores and retrieves information that is then used to regulate your biological processes.

“It is known, in biology, that every cell in your body has over 100,000 biochemical reactions per second, all of which must be carefully timed and sequenced with each other. Many (mostly European) scientists have investigated the organizing principle behind this sophisticated dance.”

From Kitten:

“The greater your store of light energy, the greater the power of your overall electromagnetic field, and consequently the more energy is available for healing and maintenance of optimal health.

“Every living organism emits biophotons or low-level luminescence, and the higher the level of light a cell emits, the greater its vitality and the potential for the transfer of that energy to another individual.

“Christ literally transferred his own life energy to others, healing them of whatever they were afflicted with. We can do the same IF we will do all He asks of us. He would have to take time out away from the general populace to replenish himself. Meditation and knowledge of many types of living were a must.

“Rulers of the world, at large, are fighting to either destroy such knowledge or discredit it. They seek to destroy any and all of light. That light is literal. Light cannot be controlled by forces of darkness hence the fear and determination to keep the underlings, peons, or slaves (the rest of us) in ignorance. That includes the huge majority of religious organizations. If any leader declares they cannot be deceived then know they are liars extraordinaire, or are exceptionally blinded / possessed. It is strongly suggested to avoid such.

“Of course there are those who much prefer others do all the thinking. They will blindly follow, refusing to learn how to be like Christ or at least a holy messenger thereof. Even the Angels have a wonderful glow!”

Chapter 8

KUNDALINI?

When I was chatting with a good friend a while ago, he mentioned that one day we “Westerners” would accept and use some of the concepts taught in the “East.” We discussed that when we finally combine what they know about spirituality with the western concepts, we will ascend to a new level of consciousness. He went on to say that everything he is about has to be scripture based, but that my mission was to bring in the more metaphysical aspects of spirituality. I agreed and said that yes, we seem to be about the “woo woo” aspects of life ever since Denise’s coma and subsequent revelations of spiritual gifts yanked me out of my Christian or LDS induced coma of narrow mindedness. That is not a “cut” at Christianity or my LDS culture or religion; it is just a fact that we tend to stay inside our little box of dogmas and anything outside of it is considered to be taboo or even declared to be Satanic. This is just what the adversary wants us to do—stay close minded.

So when I started to hear about the concept of Kundalini energy, I first ignored it. “Funny name,” I thought. “I’d better stay away from that one!” But it kept being brought up. When I began to study about Kundalini, I found everything from a black man teaching that only blacks could experience it because if a white person did they would instantaneously combust into a pile of ashes (I’m not making this up) to all kinds of other false

ideas, nonsense, and interpretations of what it really is.

The belief that many seem to have is that basically Kundalini is energy that seems to be stored in the sacral area of the spine, the bottom five fused vertebrae, and upon “waking up” by a person meditating and doing energy work, it can start to work its way up the spine to the head. Upon arrival in the brain, there is an awakening, and the person is enlightened. So “electrical energy” works its way up the body and turns on the conscious mind to a much greater degree than it was before. There are all kinds of theories of why and how it does this. I like known quantities, so I’m going to start off with what Robert Bruce describes in his book *Energy Work* on pages 81 to 84:

“Kundalini—Related Issues

“Note: Some of the ideas offered here concerning Kundalini may differ from traditional practices and schools of thought. This is because my thoughts come largely from personal experience.

“Kundalini is the Eastern term for an evolutionary energy mechanism that is built into everyone. This natural evolutionary mechanism is inherent to all of humanity, regardless of race, belief, spiritual tradition or practice. When this mechanism activates, persons are said to have awakened Kundalini or to have Kundalini rising. In the Western world today, the traditional meaning of the word Kundalini has been popularly expanded to describe most subtle energy sensations. In this sense, anyone experiencing energy sensations from the work in this book could be said to have active or awakened Kundalini.

“However, Kundalini activity in the traditional sense is a natural phenomenon that ultimately goes hand in hand with spiritual and energy body development. While awak-

ening Kundalini is not the specific purpose of this book energy work can trigger this type of activity in some people. This is nothing to be afraid of, and it is impossible to completely avoid.

“Kundalini energy is an energy seed that exists in the base of the spine, in the sacrum. This is traditionally depicted as a small cobra coiled three-and-a-half times in the sacrum. This can be awakened through spiritual practices, energy work, and intellectual activity. When this happens, Kundalini is said to rise. Kundalini is the quintessence of spiritual evolution. Once awakened, this mechanism begins to evolve the consciousness of the person involved—spiritually and energetically—and enhance spiritual and psychic sensitivity.

“In the traditional sense, if Kundalini rises spontaneously, it will first cause an intense and often painful electrical-like burning sensations that shoot up and down the spine. Do not confuse these symptoms with normal adrenaline-like energy rushes as associated with normal energy work and emotional responses.

“Full spontaneous Kundalini rising is rare and not something to be overly concerned about. It usually takes many years of mental preparation, energy work, and intellectual and spiritual practice to trigger significant levels of Kundalini activity.

“The word Kundalini is popularly used to describe most subtle energy-related sensations. So a new term was needed to describe the main event. By this I mean a full Kundalini rising, which I first experienced in 1990. I call this event Uraeus Serpent of Fire. Uraeus is the golden headpiece of Egyptian gods, like Amon Ra, which depicts

a coiled cobra with its rampant head rising over the brow. I think this depicts fully raised Kundalini, making it an obvious descriptive choice. The snake entwined staff of the caduceus symbol earlier also hints at Kundalini rising.

“Kundalini can rise in a number of ways. It can involve a single primary center at a time, with each center activating separately, or all centers together. These events can be minutes, hours, or even years apart. These differences arise from the many variables of a person’s energy body makeup, including energy blockages and the level of spiritual development of the person at that time.

“When Kundalini Uraeus rises to the full, the event begins with intense electrical burning spikes of energy shooting up through the spine, called Kundalini spikes. Next comes a massive column of energy shooting up through the central channel. After this, the serpent energy sensation rises up through the body. This feels like a physical snake as thick as a man’s wrist is forcing its way up through the perineum, coiling three-and-a-half times clockwise up through the torso (around the central channel), and then up through the neck and head. When this reaches the head, an intense, brilliant flash of light occurs in the mind’s eye. This is a massive brow center strobe.

“The rising serpent is a visceral, internal sensation and the stomach will physically contort at times during the event. This is uncomfortable, but not painful. It is, I think, caused by an internal snakelike manifestation of ectoplasm. (Ectoplasm is a semisolid, etheric substance that can be produced by the energy body.) After this, it feels as if the crown and brow centers temporarily fuse. It then feels like a heavy flap of flesh is hanging down over the eyes and nose. Kundalini is described as a cobra because

the sensations involved feel like the movements of a cobra. This event involves physical and energy sensations; so, the cobra is not just symbolic analogy, it is descriptive of the event.

“The term raising Kundalini is a bit misleading, as it is more descriptive to say that Kundalini is triggered or released. It can be difficult or impossible to stop the main event once it is triggered. Early sensations can be intense and painful. They remain intense, but they are only painful during the first few major events.

“Another point of note is that Kundalini is not a raise once and it’s done phenomenon that brings instant enlightenment and full psychic abilities. Persons may achieve full enlightenment of consciousness during a successful Kundalini raising session, but this will be abstract and temporary. After the session, they will revert to normal consciousness. This event will, however, change persons in many ways because the process of spiritual evolution will greatly intensify.

*“The words enlightenment and illumination accurately describe not only a massive brow center strobe, but also changes inside the mind’s eye. **This level of spiritual development causes light to appear in the mind’s eye.** By this I mean that when the eyes are closed, light will be seen as coming from above. However, while enlightenment is only temporarily achieved as abstract God-consciousness when Kundalini rises to the crown center during a session, **spiritual and psychic abilities and the intellect will begin to grow.** Persons in this situation will begin to develop inner genius. How this genius manifests will depend upon a person’s nature. They may, for example, become musical, artistic, literary, or scientific geniuses, depending upon natural inclinations.*

*“Kundalini involves a new level of energy body activity, which includes but goes beyond the primary center level. **Raised Kundalini must be developed after it has been achieved.**” (Emphasis added)*

Another source to understand Kundalini is Dr. Richard Gerber who received his medical degree from Wayne State University School of Medicine in Detroit then went on to study alternative methods of diagnosis and healing for some thirty-one years before passing on. He wrote an amazing book called *Vibrational Medicine* which has some interesting views on Kundalini energy. From his medical perspective he explained much of what Robert Bruce wrote about. (I suggest you read his book if you want more information than I quote here.)

Gerber does mention how meditation causes greater coherence of brain wave activity between the right and left cerebral hemispheres. This is extremely important to becoming fully conscious, which means that all the parts of the brain are circulating energy, releasing blockages, and causing activity in the energy body. This leads him to discussing Kundalini, which he states is all inter-correlated. He says that heart-brain resonance during meditation and its effect upon the sensory cortex can explain that the pains which start in the feet can actually be a byproduct of the kundalini energies. Following is his explanation of this from his book *Vibrational Medicine*, pages 406 to 408:

“The progression of symptoms is partly due to an awakening of the kundalini forces in the root chakra. In reality, the kundalini energy ascends the inner paths through the spinal cord to reach the crown chakra. During this process, impurities and blockages in the chakras are released and burned away. Some have likened the kundalini to an electrical current passing through a thin filament. As the energy moves through areas of resistance, a light and burning

heat are created just as in an electric light bulb. Blockages at the levels of the chakras are areas of increased resistance to energy flow which must be cleansed in order for the current to travel the entire circuit to the crown chakra.

“In addition to movement at the subtle-energy level... there are additional changes that occur in the central nervous system when the kundalini forces are activated by the daily practice of meditation. These changes, which are related to polarization of nervous tissue in the cerebral cortex, are created by the vibrational waves in the ventricular cavity. Meditation activates a system of resonantly tuned oscillators, which are acoustically powered by vibrational energy derived from the pumping action of the heart. When an individual achieves a deep state of meditation, breathing slow and shallow and heart activity becomes synchronized so as to create a resonant vibrational link between the heart and the brain. The oscillating electrical circuit within the brain becomes established only after grey matter along the sensory cortex has been completely polarized in a circular stimulus loop.

“It is suggested that, in addition to lifelong emotional stresses being locked into various chakras and bodily regions, there is a corresponding energy blockage within the tissue of the brain itself. As the vibrationally induced current moves through the reverberating circuit, gray matter is gradually polarized along the direction of energy flow. As the slow current meets areas of resistance to energy flow within the brain tissue of the sensory cortex, the signal hammers away until it is able to pass through to the next area. This process continues until the circular brain loop has been freed of old stress points and blockages to energy flow. When the slow current meets such an area of

stress and blockage, a corresponding sensation of pain is experienced by the individual in the associated area of the body. Although the sensation originates at the level of the sensory cortex, that pain feels like it is coming from the physical body.” (p. 406-408)

Here are a few other comments by Dr. Gerber in relation to the Kundalini experience:

“Meditators who have worked through the physio-kundalini syndrome often describe sensations of brilliant light accompanying the so-called state of bliss.” (p. 410)

“Kundalini, as a developmental process of daily meditation, is a natural means by which human beings may release stresses that have been stored within the physical and subtle bodies over a lifetime, and by which they may open their channels to creative expression and attunement with higher levels of subtle vibrational input. Not only are stresses released, but once the cortical loop has been completed, the brain and body become more efficient at handling stress...New circuitry paths are established in the system which open up new abilities and potentials.” (p. 411)

“In addition to releasing stress from the brain and body, the energies released by the kundalini process move through the body and up the subtle paths within the spinal cord while progressively activating the chakras. Bentov describes a pathway of kundalini energy which starts in the toes, travels up the legs to the spine, moves up the neck and over the face, and continues down the front of the body. As it travels up the spine, the energy stimulates the inner roots of the chakras, which link up with nerve plexuses along the spinal cord. As the energy travels over

the head and down the front of the chest and abdomen, the frontal parts of the chakras are stimulated. As these frontal chakra regions are stimulated, the individual may report tingling or other sensations in the chakra-associated areas of the body. The path of kundalini energy flow through the body is mirrored by the path of polarizing current moving through the circular loop within the sensorimotor cortex in the brain, as both become activated by the meditative process.” (p. 412)

Certainly, the Kundalini experience will be somewhat different for each person. So not everyone will experience all aspects that Robert Bruce and Dr. Gerber talk about, as they shared their individual experiences and scientific explanations. But common to all experiences is the aspect of meditation, something that the Christian world has been suspicious of—even to the point of declaring it is of Satan and that it will open the individual to Satan’s influence and control. This has made me quite curious to see what the Lord has to say through Kitten.

Further Knowledge:

“Why is there such a penchant to name things or ideas with exotic sounding names? Is it to sell an idea? Oh, maybe it is to get people up and doing things they believe is different when it is actually what has been taught for years, only they were too afraid because someone said meditation is evil. What do you think prayer is? It is a form of mediation! Oh oh, better stop praying now the cat has been let out of the bag. When you pray you are in meditation. Wow, that is evil?

“Good grief, when are people going to stop being infants and realize religions have duped you to the point you have been well brainwashed and conditioned to only look to your leaders? People will hold up their ‘scriptures’ and profoundly profess they believe everything contained therein and refuse to

believe anything other than what has been approved by their leadership. In the name of Jesus Christ, you not only do NOT believe the scriptures, you flat refuse to follow what is written in them, even when someone points out what you are refusing to recognize as the teachings of Jesus! Christ repeatedly stated we are to follow only Him and not lean on the arm of flesh. (*Whispers* the arm of flesh are your leaders.) Oh wait, if everyone looks to Christ for everything, all religious leaders will suddenly be unable to control their flocks and 'we must control them flocks of sheep.' Therefore, it is imperative the flocks are taught, brainwashed, threatened, and in general controlled into the complete belief to meditate is bad. We cannot have people chatting with the angels, Christ, or even ... GASP! God, Himself! He might tell them the truth that our leaders are actually of evil and we cannot have that!

"People, have you not learned even our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, meditated on a daily basis? He, along with all the youths and adults of ancient times meditated to rejuvenate their physical and spiritual systems. All the prophets meditated. Good heavens, what did you think Christ was doing in the wilderness, just out fishing, climbing trees, or weaving baskets? To commune with His Father, Jesus Christ meditated and had an actual conversation with His Father a.k.a. prayer. Meditation is a required part of prayer (conversing with the Lord).

"Kundalini is waking people up to recognize the fact they are actually a holy spirit stuffed inside a physical body. Once that occurs they suddenly feel the spirit around them and allow it to enter their being, bringing a lot of information contained therein to their own mind and heart. The idea is to see Christ for what He is and to mentally and emotionally connect to Him whereby He can guide and instruct individuals on their own life path back to Heavenly Father.

“The effect of meditating and actually opening to the spirit of God, especially for the first time, will cause a nearly overwhelming sensation of energy flowing into your body. Because so many are insensitive to the spirit of Christ, they do not feel it begin in the feet and legs as it begins to fill the body up. It is exactly like filling an empty bottle with water—it fills from the bottom up, beginning at the feet. However, due to the lack of sensitivity, most cannot feel it until it has risen to the base of the torso and begins to permeate a much larger portion of the anatomy.

“The major problem with opening to the spirit of pure light, life, and love is that the human systems which contain a lot of darkness, will react adversely at times. Darkness really hates light with quite a passion. Other times, people have not a clue what or who to look for when they are seeking to open mentally, emotionally, and spiritually to the ethereal or spiritual realms. Seek Christ, and humbly ask Him to control the amount you are to experience each time. With Him in control there is far less danger of finding yourself waking in a hospital or mental institution.

“If you actually open your literal heart and mind to Jesus Christ, there will be a surprising amount of tangible love and profound peace enter your entire mortal system. If there is only a feeling of power, better quickly check who you have opened to. Evil gives a lot of power, which fools far too many into believing they have connected to God. Yes, there is a connection to a God but not the one you were really seeking. (Of course, if you are seeking the God of darkness, then by all means, continue the avoidance of light.)

“Search the scriptures, contemplate (a type of meditation), then pray seeking to know what you are to learn that Christ has in store for you as in individual. The Kundalini way by itself is

okay if you would rather search all the spiritual realms without guidance. It will be an unforgettable experience, indeed. You can learn to meditate, quite well, via the Kundalini practice. Just be sure to look to Christ through it all.”

Chapter 9

AWAKENING THE THIRD EYE

On October 3, 1918, a week or so before he died, President Joseph F. Smith had a vision. He recorded what he saw, and it became D&C 138. In verse 11 he states:

“As I pondered over these things which are written, the eyes of my understanding were opened, and the Spirit of the Lord rested upon me, and I saw the hosts of the dead, both small and great.”

Joseph Smith wrote in section 76:

“And while we meditated upon these things, the Lord touched the eyes of our understandings and they were opened, and the glory of the Lord shone round about.”
(D&C 76:19)

In the same section he said:

“For by my Spirit will I enlighten them, and by my power will I make known unto them the secrets of my will—yea, even those things which eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor yet entered into the heart of man.

By the power of the Spirit our eyes were opened and our understandings were enlightened, so as to see and understand the things of God.” (D&C 76:10, 12)

And again:

“Let him that is ignorant learn wisdom by humbling himself and calling upon the Lord his God, that his eyes may be opened that he may see, and his ears opened that he may hear.” (D&C 136:32)

And finally in the Bible (KJV) we find:

“That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints.” (Ephesians 1:17-18)

Joseph Smith was connected to heaven. Remember, some have considered Joseph Smith to be America’s greatest “mystic.” He was because of his connection to the Heavens, to God, and to Angels. **He knew what he was talking about.**

We quoted his statement before that *“all things whatsoever God in his finite wisdom has seen fit and proper to reveal to us, while we are dwelling in mortality, in regard to our mortal bodies, are revealed to us in the abstract, and independent of affinity of this mortal tabernacle, but are revealed to our spirits precisely as though we had no bodies at all.” (TPJS, p. 355)*

Joseph understood better than anyone how to see into the “other world” or spirit world and the heavens. He knew that it isn’t with our physical eyes when God reveals something to us. It’s revealed to our spirits as if we had no body at all. This is why others, along with Joseph, have declared that their “eyes were opened.” They are talking about what is called the “third eye” or spiritual eye. It is typically represented as being in the middle of the forehead just above the eyebrows.

When my daughter came out of the hospital after her coma

experience she was able to “see” through the veil. I have many friends like her, all with varying abilities. A really good friend is helping with this book by using her “third eye” to cross over the veil and “see” as quoted or experienced in the above scriptures. There is a gland in the body that helps with this ability. It is called the pineal gland.

The pineal gland may be one of the most vital and miraculous parts of the human body. Its location is in the exact center of the brain and is strategic because of the number of essential fluids it secretes. One such fluid is melatonin, which allows one to sleep, and serotonin, which gives one a sense of wellbeing and happiness.

It is now believed that the pineal gland also secretes a chemical known as dimethyltryptamine or DMT. It may help with our ability to dream during the sleep process. Theoretically it stimulates the experience of death or even a near-death experience within the realms of the mind. Scientists are still trying to figure this out.

Much of this research has been published in a book, *DMT: The Spirit Molecule: A Doctor's Revolutionary Research into the Biology of Near-Death and Mystical Experiences* by Dr. Rick Strassman.

Many feel the pineal gland is considered to be the gateway or stargate within the brain where the spirit passes as it leaves the body to travel during dreaming. It is also felt that when a body expires, the spirit passes through the pineal gland to venture to higher realms, the soul plane or a higher dimensional reality. We'd just say it passes into the spirit world.

As we age, the pineal gland begins to calcify due to the harmful effects of artificial substances such as fluoride chemicals found in public water systems, hormones, additives put into processed foods, sugars and artificial sweeteners dumped into soft drinks. Some also believe that cell phones are harmful to

the pineal gland due to the high levels of radiation they give off when used.

Eventually, the pineal gland calcifies and becomes solid white. It is one the indications doctors use when they are looking for a tumor in a brain scan. It shows as a solid white dot, like a marble.

David Wilcock, who has investigated this gland, explains:

“The pineal gland is not technically a part of the brain; it is not protected by the blood-brain barrier. It exists in the approximate geometric center of the brain’s mass, has a hollow interior filled with a watery fluid, and receives more blood flow than any other part of the body except the kidneys. Since it is not protected by the blood-brain barrier, the fluid inside of the pineal gland gathers an increasing amount of mineral deposits, or ‘brain sand,’ over time—which have optical and chemical properties similar to the enamel on your teeth. This calcification appears as a bone-like mass in the center of your brain on an X-ray or MRI. Doctors use this hard, white cluster to tell if you have a brain tumor. If the white dot appears to be pushed off to one side in your scan, they know a tumor has changed the shape of your brain.” (The Source Field Investigations. (2011) pp. 40-41.)

Inside of the pineal gland are many micro-sized crystals that are floating. There are also photoreceptor cells in the pineal gland, like those of our physical eyes. Why would a gland in the center of the brain where it is supposedly dark have photoreceptor cells? Add to this the fact that it is now believed that the pineal gland naturally produces DMT (dimethyltryptamine) and works in conjunction to assist humans to visualize images in the mind and in our dreams. Much research is still needed about this gland that only a few decades ago our medi-

cal scientists declared “to be the appendix of the brain.” Meaning it wasn’t good for anything.

Modern science has found that the pineal gland has the same tissues and light-sensing mechanisms as the retina. Yet it is located in the middle of the head. They have found there to be rods and cones in it, just as in the eyes. As I stated, this is the third eye that so many sighted people “see” with. Spiritually, these sighted people see a spiritual eye just above and between our two physical eyes. Scientists have dissected human pineal glands and found one hundred to three hundred microcrystals per cubic centimeter that were floating inside. These crystals expand in the presence of electromagnetic fields.

The pineal gland stores fluoride. When we use fluoride toothpaste and drink fluoridated water, one of the places it goes to is the pineal gland. The fluoride attaches to the crystals floating in the gland, coating them with hard mineral deposits causing what they call “brain sand.” Therefore, when your pineal gland becomes coated with it, your ability to “see” is greatly diminished.

For thousands of years, this gland has been symbolized world-wide as a pinecone. It appears in many cultures around the world. The Vatican even has the “Court of the Pinecone” in which there is a huge bronze pinecone that is surrounded by Egyptian symbols. Behind the huge pinecone is an open Egyptian sarcophagus, just like one found in the King’s Chamber in the Great Pyramid in Egypt. This was not to bury anyone in. It was about opening our third eye and becoming “enlightened.” The Egyptian Staff of Osiris, dating back to approximately 1224 BC, depicts two intertwining serpents rising up to meet at a pinecone. In our day the LDS Nauvoo Temple has two pinecones on the top of mirrors in the Celestial room and in the sealing rooms. There are even two pinecones on the mirror in

the bride's dressing room. (I bet you wonder how I found that one out!)



This bronze pinecone at the Vatican was cast between 100 and 200 AD. Obviously there is something going on that the ancients knew, and we seem to have forgotten.

It is a shame that centuries ago there was a disconnection or “parting of the ways” between science and spirituality. It seemed like science said they'd handle the physical aspects of the

human system, and the church agreed to take on the spiritual. It is my belief that in order to have a complete understanding there needs to be a relationship between the two. I have several friends that have made science their God and will not look at anything spiritual, as if it has no validity in their life. They believe that all things must be explained through science. The doctors had a very hard time explaining how my daughter didn't die back in Nov. of 1999. We'd tell them that she had received a blessing and that God had different ideas than their science predicted. They often came into her hospital room, shook their heads, and walked out without saying a word. It was if they had to come and see if her being alive was real or not. Yet, even seeing it, they couldn't accept it. I actually saw one of the doctors a month ago at my brother-in-law's funeral and Denise was there. He still shook his head. I probably won't give him a copy of this book.

Let's see what the Lord God says:

“The light of the body is the eye; if, therefore, thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light.” (3 Nephi 13:22)

“The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when thine eye is evil, thy body also is full of darkness.” (Luke 11:34)

“And if your eye be single to my glory, your whole bodies shall be filled with light, and there shall be no darkness in you; and that body which is filled with light comprehendeth all things.” (D&C 88:67)

The “eye” here is singular and is not referring to our physical eyes. It refers to our “spiritual” eye. The “device” that God has provided for us to connect the spiritual to the physical body is the pineal gland. It allows us to “sense” or “see” the spiritual world. This is the third eye.

David Wilcock explains more about the pineal gland:

“The Hindus teach that the pineal gland is the third eye... It is called by the Buddhists the all-seeing eye, and is spoken of in Christianity as the eye single. . . The pineal gland is supposed to secrete an oil, which is called resin, the life of the pine tree. The word [resin] is supposed to be involved in the origin of the Rosicrucian’s who were working with the secretions of the pineal gland and seeking to open the eye single; for it is said in scripture: ‘The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single thy whole body shall be filled with light...’

“[The pineal gland] is a spiritual organ which is later destined to be what it once was, namely a connecting link between the human and the divine. The vibrating finger on the end of the gland is the rod of Jesse and the scepter of the

high priest. Certain exercises as given in the Eastern and Western mystery schools cause this little finger to vibrate, resulting in a buzzing, droning sound in the brain. This is sometimes very distressing, especially when the individual who experiences this phenomenon, in all too many cases, knows nothing about the experience through which he is passing.” (p. 53)

What really caught my eye with this quote from David’s book is the “vibrating finger on the end of the gland.” It wasn’t so much the claim of it being the “rod of Jesse” but the fact that he mentions vibration. As a result of working on this book, writing the chapter in the previous book on “Frequency,” and from doing many seminars with my gifted daughter and friend, Kitten, I have learned several things.



Above is a drawing of the Pineal Gland.

First, while researching the changes of our musical tones I went to several sites on the internet that played the Solfeggio frequencies. Upon playing the 963 Hz tone I realized that I have heard this for years in my head! I played others and felt the same thing. It is not in my ears that I hear it; it is in the middle of my head. I mentioned this to Kitten and her reply was that I was already hearing the heavenly tones. So I asked her if it was the “finger on the end of the pineal gland” that was allowing

me to hear the heavenly tones.

She said, “No. It is the crystals inside the gland.”

Then I remembered Wilcock writing about this:

“They dissected twenty different human pineal glands and found one hundred to three hundred microcrystals per cubic millimeter that were floating inside—largely composed of a common mineral called calcite. Each of these crystals were between two and twenty micrometers in length, basically hexagonal in shape, and were very similar to other crystals we find in the inner ear called otoconia. These inner-ear crystals are known to be piezoelectric—which means they expand and contract in the presence of electromagnetic fields. The hairs in the inner ear detect sounds when the otoconia bump against them—as they move around from the vibrations picked up by the eardrum.

“Piezoelectric crystals can be used to tune in to radio stations without any electricity. The electromagnetic waves that are jittering all around us make these crystals expand and contract constantly. These movements can then be detected and amplified to make sound...Some, if not many, piezoelectric crystals also give off varying amounts of light—in a process known as piezoluminescence.” (Ibid. p. 59.)

The microcrystals in the pineal gland act like the microcrystals in our inner ear to help produce sound! I wonder how many people that think they have tinnitus (a ringing in the ear) really are hearing the heavenly tones. Those tones are in the head, the middle of the head, not in the ears. Listen!

Then I thought about another concept involving the pineal gland. It seems that Pythagoras and Plato had taught some keys about numbers and how they relate to the pineal gland.

Once again David Wilcock talked about this:

“The key to the whole Pythagorean system, irrespective of the particular science to which it is applied, is the general formula of unity in multiplicity, the idea of the One evolving and pervading the many...Pythagoras called it the Science of Numbers. Pythagoras taught that this science—the chief of all in occultism—was revealed to men by ‘celestial deities,’ those godlike men who were the Divine Instructors of the Third Race. It was first taught to the Greeks by Orpheus, and for centuries made known only to the ‘chosen few’ in the Mysteries...”

“In his Life of Pythagoras, Iamblichus repeats the statement of Plato that the study of the science of Numbers tends to awaken that organ in the brain that the ancients described as the ‘eye of wisdom’—the organ now known to physiology as the pineal gland. Speaking of the mathematical disciplines, Plato says in The Republic (Book VII), ‘the soul through these disciplines has an organ purified and enlightened, an organ better worth saving than ten thousand corporeal eyes, since truth becomes visible through this alone.’” (Ibid. pp. 51-52)

I mentioned earlier that Pythagoras practiced “sound healing.” He apparently also understood the importance of numbers. It is called the Pythagorean Skein, or a way of reducing numbers to their root. For example, 528 using the skein equates to 5+2+8 which equals 15, which then reduces down to 1+5 which equals 6.

Over a four year period we did several workshops we called the “Jedi Workshops.” In one of the latter ones Kitten would share exactly what Plato was talking about, but we doubted anyone understood why she shared it. No one asked about the

purpose of her part of the workshop.

From some notes she shared with me:

“My guardian has been working with me for several days in an effort to bring me to an understanding and to finally comprehend just how differently I look at things.

“‘Your mind is substantially different than most of those living on the face of the planet. Your cognitive abilities are foreign to the vast majority of the world’s population.’

“He continued by taking me to an off-planet class room. He and I were standing in front of the class. There were approximately 30 people, all quietly seated, within the room gazing expectantly at my guardian and me. He instructed that I was to place upon the oversized white board on the wall the familiar formula: 1&1. Next instruction was to ask the students what that meant. Some stated it was one and one equals two. Some others made the statement that it was a basic child’s formula representing the number two. Some others just simply stated it was the number two. I stood looking to the floor, quietly listening, until the room was again silent. My guardian quietly gave the instructions I was to explain what I saw. In reality I was stunned that the people only saw the tiny formula 1&1. In quiet contemplation I stated what I was seeing was not just the one and one. What I see is 11 which equals 2 added to 11 equals 13. Then 1 plus 3 gives 4. My mind will automatically extrapolate as well as factor simultaneously. Another example was 2&2 which I see as 22 which equals four added to 22 equals 26 which gives eight. 3&3 is 33 which equals 6 added to 33 which equals 39 which leads to 12 giving 3.”

The “study of the science of numbers tends to awaken that

organ in the brain that the ancients described as the ‘eye of wisdom.’” The pineal gland. So I asked Kitten why she had taught this concept. She just looked at me.

“Was it because doing math in this manner helps to open the pineal gland?” I asked.

“Yes,” she replied.

If you want an exercise, go to the previous book and reduce the Solfeggio frequency numbers according to this system. And then think about this quote that Tesla supposedly said:

“If you only knew the magnificence of the 3, 6 and 9, then you would have a key to the universe.” —Nikola Tesla

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

“That which is termed Solfeggio frequency, Fractal Mathematics, Quantum Physics, Light Frequencies, etc., all exercise the mind and Pineal Gland. The greatest thing anyone can do is to be honestly diligent with not only learning the ways of Light but to actually implement all learned. Practice, practice, and more practice. All ‘Further Knowledge’ will do, is nothing, if those being taught refuse to put into practical application the knowledge they have. Everyone, including children, can be shown, talked to, and read every book in the world on how to drive an auto. But until all that knowledge is applied to an actual vehicle, everything is for nothing. It will do no one any good at all. Strange as it may seem, a LOT of practice is involved to actually learn HOW to drive said vehicle safely. Anyone can steer it, mostly with disastrous results. To actually ‘drive’ involves honest practice, hopefully under the guidance of a mature driver with many years of experience.

“Learning to pray and receive an answer, see spiritually, walk in/ with the spirit, be guided by the spirit of God, etc., takes far more practice than people have any idea of. The hugest majority want to be spoon-fed everything. They feel entitled to it all. Sadly, they are so lazy they want someone else to do all the work, so the lazy one can ride on the shoulders of the one who accomplished all needed to arrive at the feet of God. Not going to happen. The lazy ones will end up in a place totally unplanned for.

“Worldly intellectual scientists are made up of super lazy people when it comes to learning of spiritual life. As a result, they make horrendous decisions of what, where, and how things of the spirit world function. Now they are doing their best to show everything of the spirit, God, death, angels, etc. is purely and only a product of the mind. Why are they so afraid of truth? What is wrong with faith? What is so frightening about God the Father and His son, Jesus Christ?

“The determined effort to ‘prove’ all NDEs, angelic visitations, visits to Paradise, landing in hell and escaping, voices heard audibly warning or guiding, etc., are all products of the crafty human mind is purely of evil. The earth has been flooded with so much information and loads of experiences that cannot be done away showing there is a God in Heaven; evil is struggling to blatantly disprove it all to prevent mankind from learning the truth.

“Some near-death experiences have been corroborated by witnesses. Although such evidence does not constitute scientific evidence, it would certainly qualify as ‘circumstantial evidence’ able to be upheld in a court of law. Perhaps the most famous case of this kind is that of Maria, originally reported by her critical care social worker, Kimberly Clark (1984). Maria was a migrant worker who, while visiting friends in Seattle, had

a severe heart attack. She was rushed to Harborview Hospital and placed in the coronary care unit. A few days later, she had a cardiac arrest and an unusual out-of-body experience. At one point in this experience, she found herself outside the hospital and spotted a single tennis shoe sitting on the ledge of the north side of the third floor of the building. Maria not only was able to indicate the whereabouts of this oddly situated object, but was able to provide precise details concerning its appearance, such as that its little toe was worn and one of its laces was stuck underneath its heel. Upon hearing Maria's story, Clark, with some considerable degree of skepticism and metaphysical mis-giving, went to the location described to see whether any such shoe could be found. Indeed it was, just where and precisely as Maria had described it, except that from the window through which Clark was able to see it, the details of its appearance that Maria had specified could not be discerned. Clark concluded: "The only way she could have had such a perspective was if she had been floating right outside and at very close range to the tennis shoe. I retrieved the shoe and brought it back to Maria; it was very concrete evidence for me." (Clark, 1984, p.243).

"The following are excerpts reprinted by permission of Dr. Ring's and Madeline Lawrence's IANDS research paper.

Case One

"In 1985, Kathy Milne was working as a nurse at Hartford Hospital. Milne had already been interested in near-death experiences, and one day found herself talking to a woman who had been resuscitated and who had had a near-death experience. Following a telephone interview with Dr. Kenneth Ring on August 24, 1992, she described the following account in a letter:

"She told me how she floated up over her body, viewed the resuscitation effort for a short time and then felt herself being

pulled up through several floors of the hospital. She then found herself above the roof and realized she was looking at the skyline of Hartford. She marveled at how interesting this view was and out of the corner of her eye she saw a red object. It turned out to be a shoe ... [S]he thought about the shoe ... and suddenly, she felt “sucked up” a blackened hole. The rest of her near-death experience was fairly typical, as I remember.

“I was relating this to a [skeptical] resident who in a mocking manner left. Apparently, he got a janitor to get him onto the roof. When I saw him later that day, he had a red shoe and became a believer, too.” (K. Milne, personal communication, October 19, 1992)

“After Dr. Ring’s initial interview with Milne, he made a point of inquiring whether she had ever heard of the case of Maria’s shoe [as described in the introduction above]. Not only was she unfamiliar with it, but she was utterly amazed to hear of another story so similar to the one she had just recounted to Dr. Ring. It remains an unanswered question how these isolated shoes arrive at their unlikely perches for later viewing by astonished NDErs and their baffled investigators.

Case Two

“In the summer of 1982, Joyce Harmon, a surgical intensive care unit (ICU) nurse at Hartford Hospital, returned to work after a vacation. On that vacation she had purchased a new pair of plaid shoelaces, which she happened to be wearing on her first day back at the hospital. That day, she was involved in resuscitating a patient, a woman she didn’t know, giving her medicine. The resuscitation was successful, and the next day, Harmon chanced to see the patient, whereupon they had a conversation, the gist of which (not necessarily a verbatim account) is as follows (J. Harmon, personal communication, August 28, 1992):

“The patient, upon seeing Harmon, volunteered, ‘Oh, you’re the one with the plaid shoelaces!’

“‘What?’ Harmon replied, astonished. She says she distinctly remembers feeling the hair on her neck rise.

“‘I saw them,’ the woman continued. ‘I was watching what was happening yesterday when I died. I was up above.’

Case Three

“In the late 1970s, Sue Saunders was working at Hartford Hospital as a respiratory therapist. One day, she was helping to resuscitate a 60-ish man in the emergency room, whose electrocardiogram had gone flat. Medics were shocking him repeatedly with no results. Saunders was trying to give him oxygen. In the middle of the resuscitation, someone else took over for her and she left.

“A couple of days later, she encountered this patient in the ICU. He spontaneously commented, ‘You looked so much better in your white top.’

“She, like Harmon, was so shocked at this remark that she got goose-bumps, for she had been wearing a white smock the previous day.

“‘Yeah,’ the man continued, ‘I saw you. You had something over your face and you were pushing air into me. And I saw your white smock.’

“Saunders confirmed that she had had something over her face—a mask—and that she had worn the white smock while trying to give him oxygen, while he was unconscious and without a heartbeat (S. Saunders, personal communication, August 28, 1992).

Discussion

“The three cases presented above briefly attest to three impor-

tant observations:

“(1) Patients who claim to have out-of-body experiences while near-death sometimes describe unusual objects that they could not have known about by normal means.

“(2) These objects can later be shown to have existed in the form and location indicated by the patients’ testimony.

“(3) Hearing this testimony has a strong emotional and cognitive effect on the caregivers involved, either strengthening their pre-existing belief in the authenticity of near-death experiences or occasioning a kind of on-the-spot conversion.

[<http://www.neardeathsite.com/evidence.php>]

“The mortal mind with the component parts is not the end of all. It is for us to use to gain access to the spirit world whence we came. That only comes with learning truth, gaining correct knowledge, and using what is learned. That vehicle is not going to start, shift gears, and take anyone down the long road guided by an imbecile. Only by determination, faith, a lot of studies, reasonable understanding, practical application, and a massive amount of practice will anyone get anywhere. You want to open the Pineal Gland? Then actually work with it until it does open; go beyond to “see” what is out there to learn about! You will be pleasantly surprised with the wonder of it all.”

Further Insights:

Kitten is right when she states that access to the spirit world takes much work, meaning learning truth, gaining correct knowledge, and then massive amounts of practice. That is why we come to this earth—to practice. Some people have told me that they can give a fifteen minute exercise that will open up my pineal gland. So why am I so recalcitrant to believe this? Can

I really clean up years of sugar abuse with sodas and candy? How about all the fluoride treatments I received as a child because our dentist guaranteed my mother that I'd be cavity free? What about my preconceived ideas, false notions, and incorrect beliefs?

In our workshops we taught that one of the ways to help out the pineal gland is by ingesting fermented cod fish or skate fish oil. It needs to be fermented. I have been taking that for some four years now and will continue as long as I can get it. In our previous book we discussed the solfeggio frequencies. David Wilcock mentioned how the tones will cause the microcrystals in our pineal gland to expand when it "hears" them. Mathematics will help as stated by Pythagoras. Meditation is a key to opening the pineal gland, as is learning to do meditative breathing. After the kidneys, the gland receiving the most blood flow to it is the pineal gland. When you super oxygenate the blood it helps that gland tremendously. Reading the scriptures out loud helps, especially the Book of Mormon. It has the highest frequency and will increase yours, thereby increasing your light and understanding. Reading aloud also helps with the "piezoelectric" effect of the microscopic crystals in the pineal gland. "Running energy" is really beneficial to opening your pineal gland, clearing your light and physical body of unwanted blockages.

Most mornings I will listen to a solfeggio frequency and meditate at the same time while doing my breathing. Don't forget to read scriptures and pray afterward. David Wilcock talks about the tone or sound that people hear in their minds. When I read that I realized that he was talking about the tones of heaven or from the other side of the veil. While doing the above things the tones get quite loud in my head. When I feel someone from the other side near I hear the tones louder.

We have shared these things at our workshops for years, but very few have really done them with any consistency. Those that have worked at it consistently have experienced success. I know one man that could not “hear” the other side of the veil. After doing these things consistently for months, he now hears the other side of the veil. He also hears the tones in his head continually. This can take some getting used to. You can also learn to tune it out if needed.

Chapter 10

ONE WHOLE

In *Preserving the Restoration* Denver Snuffer quotes D&C 67:10-14 which states that we need to “strip ourselves of our jealousies and fears...”

He goes on to say:

“The revelation mentions ‘fears’ because there really are only two primary emotions: love and fear. Everything derived from fear is negative. The foundation of hatred is fear. Fear motivated the rebellion against God in heaven. Fear moves the adversary to be the ‘accuser of the brethren.’ Our adversary seeks the misery of all mankind. On the other hand there is love. God’s plan for mankind is based on love, and He wants us to be like him.” (p. 362)

In our previous volume *I See...Awake!* we discussed the conscious mind. Human consciousness contains our thoughts, emotions, and actions. In this volume’s chapter called “Understandings,” we discuss some of what goes on in our conscious mind—duality. There must be duality or opposition in all things as Lehi stated to his son. We are conditioned to believe that what we call opposites really are opposites. Most would consider “cold” and “hot” to be opposites, but as mentioned, they are just two measurements of temperature on the same scale. Nevertheless it is important to “see” them as opposites when

we come to mortality. That is how we come to understanding and then combine our understanding with wisdom in order to gain truth and knowledge.

When we become balanced in our mind, our thoughts and emotions will be consistent with our actions. It is when we are in a state of imbalance that our actions are not consistent with our thoughts and emotions. A good example of this is the political situation in our country right now. People on one side of the political spectrum declare that they “don’t hate.” Yet, when they get near people on the other side that support a candidate that they despise, they will try to disallow those people their right to assemble, speak, or otherwise support their candidate. They carry signs that declare they don’t hate, yet that is all they are spewing from their lips when they get near the “opposition.” They are out of balance, in a state of fear and, therefore, express their hate. This is what duality causes. We will see that if we are in a state of balance—mentally and spiritually—we can transcend that duality; we will pass from opposition to non-duality. This means we are One with our Lord Jesus Christ and also with our Heavenly Parents. At this point duality ceases to exist.

The two emotional polarities that create our reality are love and fear, as Snuffer talked about above. When we are in a state of love, our consciousness will expand. Love is the expansive force. Being in a state of fear shuts down our consciousness. In this book we discuss trauma-based mind control and the fear it causes. This is one way a person’s consciousness can be shut down and made controllable. The satanists have found that they can control people if they are kept in a state of fear. Fear is the contractive force. Might this be the reason our media spews out a constant stream of “fear porn?” We are constantly being told what to fear next. If we understand that our Lord is in charge, and we truly believe that, then there is no reason to be in fear over anything, is there? The Lord Jesus Christ said that He will

give us His peace that passes understanding. I have experienced this peace, and He is right; it does pass understanding. *“And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.”* (Phili. 4:7) That is the only way to come to our true self—through Him and His love. Interesting that the scripture states that this peace will “keep your hearts and minds through Christ.” As I have stated, it is only through Him that any reconciliation happens and stays permanent. If our *hearts* and *minds* are kept by Him, will our actions not also be of Him?

The internal manifestation of love through Jesus Christ is a state of self-control, dominion, self-ownership, true self-love, sovereignty, true self-respect, and owning and being in charge of the kingdom of self. In this world the only things we can control are our own thoughts, emotions, and actions. When we completely understand how these three work to create our reality, we are not being controlled from outside of ourselves. In other words, we have dominion, sovereignty, and self-ownership. A king is called a sovereign because he is in control of his kingdom; no one tells him what to do. If we have control of ourselves, we are sovereigns. Yet if we are of Christ we will follow what He tells us to do.

Internal confusion and internal opposition are created by the internal manifestation of the force of fear, which the adversary brings upon us in abundance. The kingdom, or house, of self is then divided asunder. The Lord said in the gospel of Mark: *“And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand.”* (3:25) Our mind is the house of our thoughts, interpretation of emotions, and actions, and if it is divided, we are then torn apart from within and cannot stand. Fear creates internal confusion and internal opposition. The etymology of the word *Satan* comes from Hebrew and is: “One who opposes, one who plots against another, obstructs, acts as an adversary.” He does this

with fear, which as Snuffer stated, is the foundation of hatred.

When love is present internally, it creates an external force known as freedom. The major problem with this world is that people are not Christ-centered and, therefore, are not holding the consciousness of love and self-ownership. Most are “me-centered” and blame others for their problems while demanding “reparations.” When we allow others to rule us, we do not rule ourselves, and then we have no ownership over our minds, hearts, or actions. We are controlled, and as stated, that control is based in fear. Is this why the Lord was so adamant when he cautioned those in His church:

“We have learned by sad experience that it is the nature and disposition of almost all men, as soon as they get a little authority, as they suppose, they will immediately begin to exercise unrighteous dominion. Hence many are called, but few are chosen. No power or influence can or ought to be maintained by virtue of the priesthood, only by persuasion, by long-suffering, by gentleness and meekness, and by love unfeigned; By kindness, and pure knowledge, which shall greatly enlarge the soul without hypocrisy, and without guile—Reproving betimes with sharpness, when moved upon by the Holy Ghost; and then showing forth afterwards an increase of love toward him whom thou hast reprovèd, lest he esteem thee to be his enemy.” (D&C 121:39-43, emphasis added)

Isn't it interesting that the Lord says kindness and pure knowledge enlarge the soul.

He also cautioned us about *exercising compulsion, control, and unrighteous dominion* over others. Maybe we should also be cautious about allowing others to do the same to us. The only person we should ever give our agency to is the Lord Jesus Christ. As stated, we should have dominion over our own selves; we

should be sovereign. In verse 46 the Lord states:

*“The Holy Ghost shall be thy constant companion, and thy scepter an unchanging scepter of righteousness and truth; and thy dominion shall be an everlasting dominion, and **without compulsory** means it shall flow unto thee forever and ever.”* (Emphasis added)

Only those who are sovereigns hold scepters and have dominions. A scepter is a sign of sovereignty. Might it need to start in our own consciousness first? Otherwise how can it expand elsewhere? It is also interesting that there is never any compulsion involved, either coming from us or against us. In God’s kingdom agency is always key.

When our hearts and minds are ruled by fear, the external reality we experience is control and slavery because we have given up our agency. An externally imposed control leads to chaos, suffering, slavery, and all things we refer to as evil or bad. Just look at what your government is doing to you. As the controls keep coming down, the people suffer at a much greater level, which creates a dichotomy as the slaves then ask for even more help from the government, which then leads to more control over their lives. Soon they become slaves in every aspect of their lives with no freedom at all. The suffering then escalates until they remember God, repent, and petition Him. The more immoral a people are, the greater the slavery is. Notice what is happening in the United States of America right now as we allow others to lead us into socialism by taking from the working few to meet the demands of those who want free benefits from the government. It’s the slippery slide to slavery of all. The opposite is also true. The more moral they are, the greater will be their freedom—something that people don’t seem to understand.

Most people don’t know about or understand God’s natural/

spiritual laws described in the previous volume and, therefore, believe that perception is reality. Unfortunately, about the only thing that brings them out of this mind set is the suffering we've described. Usually the suffering must be so intense that they will finally stop and come to the understanding that begins all spiritual journeys—"I WAS WRONG!" This is well illustrated in the Book of Mormon. We have all studied the repetition cycles the Nephites went through. They would become prosperous and then turn away from God. Eventually after much suffering, they would realize they were wrong and repent, turning back to Him. This is why having an unrighteous king is so devastating, as his desire for control leads to fear which in turn leads to slavery. When our mind is out of balance we seem to desire for others to control us and we gladly allow them to lead us into slavery. Unfortunately there is never a shortage of men that are willing to enslave and kill for their benefit and power.

Nothing will change this condition in the world until we come out of the consciousness of separation or the suffering becomes so intense that we finally turn back to the God we have abandoned as a nation and individually. We need to change this false world view that believes in order for anybody to "win" or have comfort, other people have to lose and suffer. We need to get rid of the idea that it's okay for us to do immoral things to other people as long as we aren't suffering, and we benefit from doing them. As long as we're in this mindset, things will not change; they will deteriorate and get much worse. Also, men teach and believe that if enough people become "conscious" then it will change. Hogwash! When has that ever happened?

A change happens only when people become conscious of Christ. It is "waking up" to our awful situation AND looking to Him that allows us to override all of the conditioning and mind control that has been imposed on us. If we don't wake up to Him, looking to His light to guide us, how can we override

the conditioning that has been imposed on us? There is no other way!

Here is why there is no other way but Christ's to change the direction of this world. God's law governs creation—"Do unto others as you would have them do unto you"—the Golden Rule. Whereas, Satan's law states "Do what thou wilt" no matter the consequences to others, just as long as it benefits you.

In the book *Moral Evil* by Andrew Michael Flesher he states:

"In other words, if God is a creator, Satan has become a formidable "subcreator," enough to pose a genuine challenge to rival God's designs...Satan is a rogue with whom it is in principle impossible to reason." (p. 31)

Man's law is based on the ideology that he can be the arbiter of truth, which law was instilled in him by Satan. That is why it is such a failure and disaster and will always be so. As has been written elsewhere in this work, we are not the authority of anyone else. We are not the arbiters of truth; we're not the ones who define what morality is because it would be based on our perceptions and comfort level. For example, if I'm an eight month old baby in the womb, I'm hoping that my "mother" is not one who has the belief that I'm just a fetus, a non-human entity, and can be murdered since I have no constitutional rights anyway. That is man's law, man's morality; it did not come from God.

People's perceptions of what is right are largely determined by what those around them have taught them. For example, for a time "blacks" were considered low and "whites" were privileged; then the tables turned. Now the focus is on Christians who have "Christian privilege" because they get Dec. 25 off from work. Another example is the justification for abortion. There seems to be a growing number of people who believe that a baby isn't a baby until it's born. Up until that moment it's

okay to take its life. Who made them the arbiter of this “truth?” Example three: In the Book of Mormon the Lamanite children were taught to hate the Nephites because of the wrongs done to their fathers. Has it changed today? No, it has not. Again it is taught that just the Caucasians had slaves, and I am evil and must pay reparations. I must pay for what other people’s ancestors have done. This is just the tip of what people are being taught to believe. This is mind control designed by Satan to instill division, bring about war, and destroy society, especially the family unit. Fear is the force that influences us to become closed to truth. Fear ultimately shuts down people’s awareness. Then they will go on the attack and preach the lies that have been fed to them by their handlers. This will end in civil war and the destruction of this land as prophesied in the Book of Mormon and the Bible.

So to overcome all this we need to become fully conscious human beings in the Lord Jesus Christ. As stated in Volume One, when our left and right brain are in balance, we are fully conscious. When the left and right sides are out of balance (as most everyone’s is), we are unconscious and completely controllable. As humans we express our consciousness in three ways. Mark Passio has a great section on his website where he talks about the threefold nature of consciousness. The following is quoted from Passio’s website (www.whatonearthishappening.com):

“This threefold nature of Consciousness has been referred to in various ways in many spiritual, mystical, and religious traditions throughout time. Some have explained it as Body-Mind-Spirit, while in other circles it has been called the Law of Three. Many traditions have described this aspect of Consciousness as the Holy Trinity—the Divine Father, the Divine Mother, and the Divine Child—symbolic descriptions for the manifestation of three vehi-

cles of expression within one being.

“The first way we express our Consciousness is through our Thoughts. In relation to the concept of the Divine Trinity, thoughts could be seen as the Creator God, God the ‘Father,’ as it has been termed in Christian traditions. Our thoughts precede all other ways in which our Consciousness manifests, either internally or externally. Everything that comes into manifestation in our external experience first existed at some point in time as a thought in Consciousness. Thoughts in and of themselves are purely non-physical and are not manifested in the material realm. They travel as electrical impulses in the synapses of the brain, and they do not arise from any pre-existing material things. Thoughts equate with the Mind in the Body-Mind-Spirit model of Consciousness. After arising within the Mind, our thoughts take on the role of Creator in our observed reality, as they do indeed create that which manifests within us and around us.

“Emotions are the second expression of our Consciousness. They could be described as the internal manifestation of the reaction to our thoughts. As an internal expression that is felt within ourselves, emotions relate to the feminine principle of the Tao, the Yin polarity. In the Holy Trinity model, emotions are the Divine Mother, the Sacred Feminine of the Divine Family. In the Body-Mind-Spirit model, emotions are the Spirit, the felt presence of our experiences, which act as a balancing mechanism between our thoughts and our actions. Emotions are felt internally within our bodies through the creation of chemical transmitters produced by our brain and nervous system. This occurs after we have an initial thought about the concept or situation at hand. It is then internalized and felt with

the body through the emotions.

“The third aspect of the Trinity of Consciousness is our actions. Through our actions, we express our Consciousness in the external material realm in which we exist. Actions could be seen as the Divine Child of the Trinity, as they are the ‘offspring’ of our thoughts and emotions. Actions are naturally equated with the active, masculine principle, the Yang energy of the Tao. To one degree or another, actions, as physical expressions, are carried out with our body. As such, actions are the Body component of the Body-Mind-Spirit model. In the Christian model, actions are the ‘Son’ of God, the product of God the ‘Father,’ our thoughts, and the Divine ‘Mother,’ our emotions.

“The most important thing to keep in mind about this threefold nature of our Consciousness is that it requires unification in order for us to function optimally and experience happiness in our lives. This means that if these aspects of our Consciousness become imbalanced, they can soon become completely fractured and we will then experience this ‘tearing apart’ of Consciousness through suffering in our lives. This occurs when our thoughts, emotions, and actions are in contradiction with each other. For example, while we may think and feel a particular way about some aspect of our lives, we may still be persuaded, for whatever reason, to take action that is in disagreement with our thoughts and emotions. This betrayal that takes place within ourselves is called Opposition; for when one component of our Consciousness betrays another, we are in Opposition with ourselves.

“The state of balance or harmony between the three aspects of our Consciousness occurs when we have unified our thoughts, emotions, and actions. As we think, so we

feel, and so we act. There is no contradiction between the three expressions of our Consciousness. When we live our lives in this mode, suffering begins to diminish and we are imbued with powerful creative and healing energies. This state is the inverse of the state of Opposition. We are no longer in a state of internal betrayal, and therefore this balance is reflected in the external conditions we experience.

“The highest form of this state of balanced Consciousness is call Non-Duality, for the three aspects of our Consciousness have become united as one, and are no longer in Opposition with each other. This state of Consciousness has been called by other names such as Christ Consciousness, Enlightenment, Anointing, Full Awakening, and many others. Whatever we call it, it essentially means the same thing—the uniting of yourself, so that your thoughts, emotions, and actions do not betray each other. Through the process of uniting the threefold aspect of our Consciousness within ourselves, we pass from Opposition to Non-Duality, and we become One.”

Many people that teach this idea of enlightenment or Christ consciousness leave out Christ when they talk about becoming “One.” They use his name in “Christ Consciousness” but Christ, the Savior, and Redeemer plays no active part; neither do they include Him in that “oneness.” The world teaches that we are to accomplish this ourselves, within ourselves. In reality, true consciousness is when this oneness is accomplished along with the Lord, and when we connect to the Lord Jesus Christ. Is this what the Lord means when He states that we are to become of one heart and mind with Him as He is with the Father? How is that accomplished?

At the same time my daughter, Denise, was in the hospital, I went to a friend’s home to visit. He had me watch a movie, and

at the end I went into a state of profound gratitude. I felt myself leave my body and float in what I describe as “jello” as there are no words that adequately describe it. It was so peaceful I didn’t want to come back. But I did, and my eyes stayed dilated for about three days. I could feel the pain, cancers, and other problems of the children at the hospital. I had become “empathic” and had started to take on their problems. A friend called, and I told him of my dilemma. When he told me how to resolve it by giving the problems to Christ, I began to understand what I’d just experienced—God’s pure love.

It is my belief that at that moment in time I was plugged into God at such a level that I was seeing things from Heaven’s perspective. Later that night I stood next to a guy covered in tattoos and gang colors. I asked him why he was in the hospital. He said he was there to be a donor for his little niece that needed a bone marrow transplant. I wanted to hug the stuffing out of that guy. I had total and complete love for him and everyone. If someone had punched me in the nose, I would have gotten up, hugged him, and then thanked him for the experience.

Is there a scale of comparison in God’s point of view? Or do we all just have different degrees of light for instance? Darkness is just the absence of light. You can light a room with a candle, but you can’t do the same with darkness. It is impossible to shine darkness into a room. But isn’t it still on the same spectrum we call light? Yes. There is in reality only one attribute contained in what we call polar opposites—hot and cold, for example, which is just one attribute on the scale of temperature. The other attribute is an illusory component—something that really isn’t there, but we see it as being there so we have a scale of degrees to compare the real thing against. That way we come to know the real essence of what we came here in mortality to learn: hot and cold, good and bad, light and dark, pain and

pleasure. It requires becoming mortal and having a veil to really get the experience of opposites and to be able to live within this scale of comparison.

Here are more examples of the difference between the world's view and God's view. If I had looked at the tattoo-covered, gang-colored organ donor from my world view, I would have felt no love for him because of what he looked like and what I perceived he represented. Duality existed in the moment of looking at this experience from a mortal view. When I have become a truly conscious human being in Christ, the opposites are reconciled and duality ceases to exist in my world view because now I have a Christ-centered view. Our mind, heart, and spirit have become one. Our thoughts, emotions, and actions are one, and just as He declared, He is one with the Father. We have become enlightened. We are now awake and "see" from God's point of view. Now we can "rise" up and become a new man or woman in Christ Jesus.

In the "Ancestral Healing" chapter in this book we read about Elizabeth. From the world or mortal view we might say, "What a waste of a life," sold by her mother to a rich guy who put her into his personal dungeon so he could rape her at will. She gave birth to three children by this monster and after they were old enough to fend for themselves, she killed herself. After transitioning she was helped by four female angels to a hospital where she has been for some seven hundred of our earth years. She felt of little worth and wanted to know why she had to endure such a tremendous ordeal. Finally during an ancestral healing, she met the Lord Jesus Christ and He told her:

*"You are of **great** worth! You completely fulfilled your mission. You carried your mission to the absolute total end. Before your birth into mortality, it was known the man you were with was a worshiper of Lucifer. It was also*

*known he would destroy many women. To prevent that, you were asked if you would go down and be the one who stayed mortal to prevent him from harming many others. You knew the trial would be severe. Knowing and understanding what the mission entailed, you consented to take upon your shoulders the mission. Beloved daughter, you are of **very great worth!** You saved the lives of many!"*

Christ was looking at her life from a spiritual point of view. Her life was not wasted! Her life had a very strong purpose. Of course, if we take in the mortal view that we come here with only one shot at mortality, then this might be a wasted life. But then we make up for that by stating that if she had had the opportunity to hear the gospel and would have accepted it, she still merits the Celestial glories. Yet we have learned in the chapter on "Understandings" that we have experienced mortality on many worlds, so Elizabeth is not done yet. One lifetime or world is not enough to learn how to become like our Parents. As Joseph Smith stated in the King Follett sermon: *"It is not all to be comprehended in this world; it will be a great work to learn our salvation and exaltation even beyond the grave."* (TPJS, p.348)

We have also learned that when we become very Christ-centered, we actually take on His spirit. He stated, *"He that hath seen me hath seen the Father."* This means He had become one with the Father as we are required to become one with Him and take on His spirit. I know that experience; it is real. We should all seek it. We wrote about that in Chapter Ten of *I See... Awake!* Is that part of becoming a fully conscious human being in Christ?

Lectures on Faith shows how Jesus the Christ did this exact thing:

"And he being the Only Begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth, and having overcome, received a fullness of the

glory of the Father, possessing the same mind with the Father, which mind is the Holy Spirit, that bears record of the Father and the Son, and these three are one; or, in other words, these three constitute the great, matchless, governing and supreme, power over all things; by whom all things were created and made that were created and made, and these three constitute the Godhead, and are one; the Father and the Son possessing the same mind, the same wisdom, glory, power, and fullness—filling all in all; the Son being filled with the fullness of the mind, glory, and power; or, in other words, the spirit, glory, and power, of the Father, possessing all knowledge and glory, and the same kingdom, sitting at the right hand of power, in the express image and likeness of the Father, mediator for man, being filled with the fullness of the mind of the Father; or, in other words, the Spirit of the Father, which Spirit is shed forth upon all who believe on his name and keep his commandments; and all those who keep his commandments shall grow up from grace to grace, and become heirs of the heavenly kingdom, and joint heirs with Jesus Christ; possessing the same mind, being transformed into the same image or likeness, even the express image of him who fills all in all; being filled with the fullness of his glory, and become one in him, even as the Father, Son and Holy Spirit are one.” (Lecture 5, paragraph 2, emphasis added)

It doesn't get much plainer than this, does it?

The other day I was in Denver Snuffer's office talking about this concept. He related how someone like John Stockton who played for the Utah Jazz basketball team had the ability to “see” the court and do things that seemed impossible. Or how a baseball player has thirty-nine hundredths of a second to make a decision of what to do when the ball leaves the pitcher's hand.

When there is not enough time to consciously react, instinct takes over from the many thousands of hours of practice, just like Stockton on the basketball court. He said that is how we need to become in our relationship with the Lord. I agreed and told him we talked about that in our last book. It is called “unconsciously competent.” We need to become one with the Lord to the point that we are unconsciously competent in doing exactly what He would do. He agreed with the statement saying that is what a hall of fame batter does or a hall of fame basketballer does. They have become unconsciously competent in their discipline. I maintain that the only “discipline” that matters is our relationship with the Lord and becoming like Him. Being a hall of fame player in any sport will get you a lot of fame and perhaps money, but it does nothing for your eternal welfare.

God likes numbers, and there are several different triune aspects to ourselves: Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; Heart, emotions, and actions; Father, Mother, and Son, and so forth. In all aspects of the gospel of Jesus Christ it teaches that we must have all of these triune aspects of ourselves become one. In that manner we become complete, whole, or perfect as They are. In the chapter on the Holy Ghost, Kitten talked about three aspects of ourselves that also need to become one: our intellect (intelligence), spirit, and mortal (body).

Part of what she stated was:

*“How to help others see the fact they are actually three major parts: **intellect, spirit, and mortal**, all working (we hope) in unison. It is amazing how many people are not quite the sum of the parts.... The tricky part is bonding the physical with the spiritual which seems pretty impossible. Granted, far too many not only forget, but appear to have left the intellectual part waaaaay out in space somewhere*

(between unknown galaxies perhaps?) and arrived with a physical body and enough spirit to be considered trainable. The spirit body and mind (intelligence) know vastly more than the mortal is willing or able to know.

*“Redemption (to actually be redeemed) **brings all three parts of our being into a single whole.**”*

We are here to learn to become one again or One Whole with the Fathers and Mothers, the Gods of Light, by becoming a redeemed being through our Lord Jesus Christ. That includes all aspects of our self, which is accomplished by casting Satan out of our midst, overcoming our fears through Christ, and uniting our parts by becoming whole or perfect in Christ. This is only accomplished here in mortality through the Lord Jesus Christ. When each of us have come to the point of having been tested in all things, having been proven to be true and faithful, then He will come and embrace us, perform an ordinance, and introduce us to the Father. (If you think it is only the Father you are introduced to, we need to chat.) Each of us is then a redeemed being, all three are now a single whole, and we each can then move on to even more glorious understandings, testing, proving, becoming, light, knowledge, and glories. We can become like Him. He is now our Father, since he in essence has birthed us through the process of our becoming whole or complete, a redeemed being.

Chapter 11

SCIENTIFIC APPROACH TO THE GIFTS OF THE SPIRIT

In April of 2008 we invited Dr. Stephan Schwartz to come to Utah and teach a group of us about what he called the “Science of Spirit.” It was an amazing lecture to be sure. Because it teaches so many concepts that we are working on and will be talking about, I am going to repeat part of it here.

He titled his lecture, “Scientific Approach to the Gifts of the Spirit.” Because most of his audience were LDS, he looked into LDS scriptures and found one about healing and started his talk with it:

“And these signs shall follow them that believe—in my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick and they shall recover.” (Mormon 9:24, emphasis added)

“Next to prayer the most universal aspect of all spirited paths is the idea that an individual can stand in as an intercessor or can send therapeutic intention that will beneficially affect the well-being of another. Almost any religion teaches this concept of the capacity to heal.

“Is this just all magical thinking? All that doesn’t fit into the time space world is described by atheistic scientists as ‘magical thinking.’ Is it possible for an individual to affect, at a distance, the physiological function of another living organism? That’s a reasonable scientific question that is susceptible to study.”

Therapeutic Intention – intention to do good:

“Single Cell Organism – in 1968 fungus cultures at the Institute Metaphysic in France had ten subjects (people) concentrate on little cell colonies for 15 minutes at a distance of 1 ½ meters. They didn’t touch them. There were 194 culture dishes all laid out—Petri dishes. Of the 194, 151 showed retarded growth. This is a highly significant result.

“Two scientists in the USA did 16 similar growth trials with fungus. They only did it to see if distance mattered. (Ingo Swan and Harold Shermann went to Mars, Mercury, and Jupiter before the space probes [using remote viewing] and made a whole series of statements which contradicted what was then known. Years later when space probes went there it turned out all their descriptions were correct.) The scientists and remote viewers found that distance is irrelevant. It’s as easy to see something near as far. But can you heal at a distance? In this experiment they were between 1 and 15 miles away from the cell colonies in their Petri dishes. Out of 16 trials, all 16 were successful.”

Dr. Schwartz also described experiments where it showed that intention is a key component of healing:

“Two healers, one doctor, and four others who didn’t believe in spiritual healing tried to see if they could increase the growth of yeast in test tubes. There were 240 test tubes,

120 were treated and 120 were the controls. The healers and believing physician produced highly significant results. The indifferent students produced no results. Intention matters."

He discussed experiments done with animals that were significant:

"They did 21 experiments over several years. Healers tried to awaken mice more quickly from general anesthesia. They used whole groups of mice that all had the same lab specifications — genetically the same. They would anesthetize two at a time along with two controls. Then the healers came in and tried to wake them up — focused on them — with healing and awakening. 21 studies were done. 19 were successful, they woke up faster than the controls. Distance made no difference.

"They then laid hands on mice with cancer. Eighty-seven percent were cured of the cancer. Intention matters. They were the focus of therapeutic intention. Later they would inject these same kind of cancer cells into the cured mice and the cancer did not reengage — it wouldn't take."

There were several other studies sited that indicates these same results. He went on to say that there are *"many factors in healing, like how the spouses treat each other. How you do it makes a big difference in the outcome. This stuff works under the most rigorous conditions."*

He continued:

"What is the agent of action? The healer, the healed, or something else? We know that these factors are important: focusing, religion, building, clothing, music, altered state, and intent. Singing causes linkage of brain activity. Para-

sympathetic and sympathetic nervous systems are altered by the act of singing, chanting, drumming, or fasting. Fasting destabilizes your system and allows you to enter an altered state."

He told me a story about being on a Native American reservation where he observed a medicine man doing healing work. A young man came in with a severe cut on his thigh; it was quite deep. The medicine man placed a piece of raw meat next to the leg and did his healing. Dr. Schwartz watched as the leg healed, closed, and looked fine. The piece of meat next to the leg shriveled up. Right after this another woman came in with her son who had a deep cut on his thigh. The medicine man started his healing procedure and then turned to the mother and asked why she was preventing him from healing her son. She said that she was mad at him. The medicine man then said he could do nothing for the boy. The mother's anger had stopped the healing that could have taken place. He called this "*observer expectancy effects.*" The bias of the healer, patient, or even others can affect our healing and even our well-being.

Then he told about the most amazing experiment showing what observer expectancy effects can produce:

"There was a research physician in Israel that was furious about the healing studies. He thought it was [baloney] and didn't believe it. He decided to design an experiment that would put the lie to bed. It would be so rigorous that it would only be possible if the non-time domain existed, which he did not believe to be the case. He would do it in a hospital with double blind, parallel groups, and every kind of academic rigor you can put into an experiment.

*"In **July of 2000** he went to the medical center's computer and said, 'Give me the first name of everyone in the hospi-*

tal from 1990-1996 who had contracted a particular kind of blood infection.' This blood infection was common in cardiovascular patients because they keep sticking things in their veins and it's not unusual to contract this particular blood infection.

"So he is in the year 2000 looking for patients that were in the hospital a decade ago. These people have all been in the hospital and gone home 4 to 10 years previously. He gets 3,393 names and then tells the computer to randomly select 2,000 names. Then he tells the computer to randomize them yet again, with 1,000 in the intervention population and 1,000 in the control population.

"The intervention population had their first name and last initial given to a group of healers. They were told to say, 'I pray that Sarah S. will be healthful and be healed.' They did this for 2 weeks, 20 minutes per day. Logically, none of this should have made any difference to anything because, to start with, these people had been out of the hospital 4 to 10 years.

"The study discovered that the length of stay and duration of fever in the hospital were significantly shorter in the treated group as compared to the control group!"

"These people in the future reached back into the past to affect the condition of the people in the past."

When he told us this at the workshop, many of us had to stop to pick up pieces of our brains that had scattered all over the hall. We made him repeat this last statement many times and then explain it further:

"This study tells us that you cannot change the past,

but what you can do is reach back into the past when it is the present. You can't change the outcome, but you can make it come out a certain way in the first instance."

Yes, my brain blew up again. I wanted to call time out, but this was no game. He continued explaining:

"It's not like he had one set of outcomes and then he went back and changed the outcomes. No, he went from the future into the past in time-space terms, and he made the experience of the patients who were in the hospital in 1990-1996, that the cause of their illness was different than the people who did not receive the prayer. You can't change the past, but what you can do is go back into the past and alter it as it is happening, the first time, to come out a certain way."

Yes, I had just got my brain matter back in, and he blew it away again. I did look around the room and saw most everyone was in the same position as I was.

"If you are praying for people who lived in the past, you are not changing their lives, but you are altering their lives back when they were living them in the first instance. You can't change the past, but you can influence how it happens when it happens, the first time. This is a retro-casual effect."

Then he opened it up to questions:

Question: "How do you address the criticism that it's not effecting the past to make it come out a certain way in the present when it's happening? How do you know it's not just somebody affecting the computer chip in present time? Would any consciousness interacting with that data pro-

duce a freeze of the data so it could no longer be changed?”

Answer: “The first act of observation fixed what happened in the past, because it had already been observed. The act of observation alters the set-up of the conditions. It collapses the vector.”

Dr. Schwartz then changed the subject a little in order to give our brains a small rest and time to pick up any remaining pieces. He talked about Tibetan Tankas, paintings of Buddha, which represent an image of God. The Tibetans use Tankas to help them focus on a god-image. This would be similar to a seer stone being used as a focusing tool as we’ve discuss in past books. The Tankas original intent was not art. They keep them covered with cloth, and the only time a Tanka was uncovered was when an individual or group were praying.

“It is a focusing technique or tool. Like going into a church, it is a way of creating a condition of focus. You are not to observe them with profane casual awareness. You only look at them when you are prepared to move into the state of consciousness that you are trying to arrive at so that this representation of the Godhead can manifest its power. They are kept covered because acts of profane secular observation dissipates their power.”

I thought about being in church and the ways that God might use to help us get into “a condition of focus.” Singing Hymns and the Sacrament would be two ways. They are designed to put us into an “altered” state of mind, focusing on the Savior, just what the Tankas are designed to do. They keep the Tankas covered because “acts of profane secular observation dissipates their power.” Might tools the Lord gives us like seer stones accomplish the same thing? If you are using a seer stone, crystal, or pendulum should you allow others to touch or hold it? Would

this be similar to walking outside in your temple clothing? Or allowing someone to handle and examine garments and temple clothing? Might our Father consider that a profane act of curiosity? Or handling other “tools” the Lord has you use in His work.

“When we are working with intention and we are accessing and opening the information energetic domain, time and space don’t matter. But what does matter is intention and the reiteration of observation makes things more numinous (Having a strong religious or spiritual quality).”

Numinous is the act of intentioned awareness which creates an energetic field around something, like an object, person, or thing, and can make it glow in a certain way. It is a quality of the non-space time domain. It is similar to spiritual currency—time and attention. Though Dr. Schwartz calls it “intention and reiteration of observation.” When his definition is added, then spiritual currency might be time, attention, **and** intention. Though as he said, in this domain, time and space don’t matter. We would call this the spiritual side of life or the spirit world.

Dr. Schwartz continued explaining:

“In religious terms Jesus said where two or three are gathered in His name—because you have a group of people who are focused in a common intention, the capacity to open to the experience of the non-time space domain increases. If your intention is to have a spiritual experience, that’s what happens.

“When the scientists at NASA were at an impasse, they would stop thinking about or working on the problem and go play a game of darts. In essence they created a ritual that allowed them to move into an altered state of common intention, which allowed them to access the information

they were seeking. This is a secular version of a religious ceremony.

*“We can conclude that these effects manifest over a huge spectrum from single cells to humans. Religious affiliation does not seem to matter. Effects are seen in both religions and secular context, but the key factor is LOVE. When Jesus said that you must love God and love your brother and in that is the whole of the law and the prophets, that’s it! Everything else is commentary. **The key factor is loving compassionate intentionality.***

“Subjects with greater need to be influenced by positive mental intent, those for whom the influence would be most beneficial are more receptive and have better outcomes.

“A caution. You can really screw people’s lives up when you pray for them and have a cherished outcome. It is always, ‘Thy will be done.’

“A woman who was a spiritual healer developed a kidney stone. She got a group of healers together to break up the stones, so that it would pass. That was their cherished outcome. They concentrated for two weeks to break up this stone before she went into the hospital. This was when they did surgery to take out the stone, a 30 minute surgery. They got into her kidney and the stone had exploded all over her kidney. 8 hours later it was done. These people had a cherished outcome and visualized every day for two weeks of the stone exploding. They lacked understanding. They should have prayed—‘May God’s will be done for Meredith’s kidney stone that she may be restored to health.’ They had a cherished outcome instead of a goal.”

Is not the same thing done with a prayer circle in an LDS temple? Remember in our previous book the healing that took

place with my friend that had some cancerous tumors on her ovary. Her friends got in a circle around her and touched each other, focusing on the Lord Jesus Christ's light, bringing it in, and then sending it to the next person around the circle and finally to the woman that had her hands laid on my friend. They had focused intention and prayed that His will be done for her. Is that not what should happen in a temple prayer circle? Do you see it? An altar with a packet of names on it, a focusing tool, men and women having just learned how to access heaven, and doing so, which should "put them in an altered state," which means they are accessing heaven. Then with focused intent on those names, they pray for the Lord to send healing and health to them. It has all the same elements, does it not? Wasn't the Lord teaching you the same principles in that sacred place? Should we not have been "fighting" to get in that circle instead of them begging for more men to come forward to complete it?

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

"Where does intention come from? Is it just of the mind? The mind is only a part of the equation. What is in the heart is the greatest force of intention. Love is the greatest healer of all. The mind directs the intent of the heart. The problem is the mortal mind can override what God deems is better for us. God will allow us to experience the consequences of what we were determined to do. Indeed, if we insist on doing everything our way, He will allow it, and we end up with the dubious joy of the consequences of our actions whether they are mental, emotional, spiritual, or physical.

"As much as the forces of darkness and evil would like us to believe otherwise, mankind can mentally and emotionally affect the ethereal elements surrounding us. Those who have the ability to see have noted the various colored tendrils (appear-

ing like flowing strings, cords, or streams) extending from the person of origin to the intended. It is difficult to describe such a phenomenon. All living, including the elements, have an aura around them. They are constantly in motion. When anyone has intense thoughts and emotions about anyone or anything, the tendrils formed begin at the heart center, but are directed by the mind toward whatever or whomever they are thinking about. Whatever is within the heart, be it love, hate, anger, pity, various desires, etc. regulates the color, strength, and size of the tendrils. Each tendril is sent out to whatever the originator has the emotional and mental intent upon. Each tendril has the power to affect others whether the intended being is aware of it or not. Our beloved pets send us love in this manner, which enables them to recognize when their 'people' are in trouble. People who are truly 'in love' will be bonded by a literal, often multi-colored, cord. When the love is reciprocated, the cord (or cords) is surprisingly strong. If love is not reciprocated, the one containing the actual love is able to sense something is wrong due to the type and intensity of the reciprocated emotions via the cord. Everyone and everything is affected one way or another by those who have unwittingly formed and attached a tendril to a human, animal, plant, insects, mother Earth, or even the Gods. Those tendrils affect each of us for good or ill. **The best possible thing anyone can do when they pray for another or have any type of emotional intelligence towards another, is to look to our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, and ask Him to do what is necessary for others in His wisdom.**

“It is recorded in the scriptures that the very rocks have the history of the earth recorded within them. There are specific elements which record and carry the life history of each and every mortal upon planet Earth. The Gods have control of those elemental books. It is true, there are literal living books filled with the records of each and every living being upon planet

Earth. The books record the thoughts, emotions, actions, what the senses detected, and all they had been taught as a type of movie. The movie also records the thoughts, emotions, actions, and that which was sensed from those with whom we have had interactions. It shows the type of tendrils we have formed among all.

“Tendrils can also be formed and attached to memory. Not that which is just in our own mind, but that which is recorded in the ethereal books. **Although we are not allowed to change the actual occurrence, we can and are allowed to change the memory of the affected senses that pertains to a particular memory.** In this way we are able to not only facilitate our own healing from a traumatic past, but we are also able to assist friends, family, pets, etc. which greatly changes the effects. The trick is to be sure to go through our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, who is able to transmute the painful, dark, roiling, traumatic experiences to a thing of light and blessing. His thoughts are of pure light and love which is why He is able to transmute that which is of darkness into light. This is one of the reasons why we are told, repeatedly, to love our enemies. The bright light of love will affect those of darkness. They will either flee to hide in darkness, or they eventually will be changed into beings of light.

“Believe it or not, we can end up with so many tendrils, or attachments, we become bogged down with fatigue, illness, emotional and mental baggage to the point they can actually kill. There is a way to remove the attachments we should not have. One way to remove some is through simple prayer. Another way is we can visualize the removal, such as taking a knife and slicing the offending attachments off. Of course, one has to be aware of which attachments need to be removed and which ones should be left intact. Some attachments take specific ordinances to be removed by one upon whom our Lord

and Savior, Jesus Christ, has endowed both permission and the knowledgeable gift. However, a goodly portion of the attached tendrils can be removed by visualizing the judicious use of a large set of shears, scissors, knife, or even a sword slicing them off of us and sending the tendrils back to the originator or simply have them dissipate into the ether. All in all, it is lovingly admonished to do everything under the guidance and auspicious wisdom of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, followed by giving heartfelt (as much as able) gratitude for all the experiences and even the consequences.”

Chapter 12

PHOTONS, WILL AND DNA

In 1984, a Russian scientist by the name of Dr. Peter Gariaev discovered a remarkable property of DNA. Dr. Gariaev found that a DNA strand has the natural tendency to absorb and store hundreds to thousands of photons (light particles). He placed DNA inside a small quartz container, and to his surprise the DNA absorbed every photon in the room. Dr. Gariaev was not aware that a Dr. Fritz-Albert Popp had found out this same thing in the 1970's. Dr. Popp discovered that all different forms of life absorbed photons into their DNA, even bacteria, plants, insects, and fish. He even found that in some cases light was exchanged between organisms. A water flea would emit light that would then be absorbed by its neighbors. He said that photons seemed to be intelligently directed.

With Dr. Gariaev things got even stranger when he removed the DNA from the quartz container and was completely amazed that the photons that had originally been absorbed by the DNA stayed in the quartz container and even more amazing was they stayed in the exact shape of the DNA. Anyone would have thought that the photons would have scattered, but there seemed to be an unknown force keeping the photons in place. Then Dr. Gariaev blasted the photons with nitrogen gas to disperse them, and within minutes the photons came back to the same area and formed the same "phantom" DNA shape. It has

been suggested by this experiment that gravity has a quantum structure and can exist without the presence of matter, permeating throughout the entire universe.

David Wilcock in his book, *The Synchronicity Key*, states:

“When Popp broke open the DNA molecule with a chemical known as ethidium bromide, a flood of about a thousand photons surged out. This suggests that each DNA molecule is like a miniature fiber-optic cable. Photons zing back and forth inside the DNA at light speed until they need to be used by the body. Popp also found that these photons were intimately related to our level of physical health. In areas of the body that were weakened or diseased, the amount of light stored in our DNA was significantly lower—or could almost be entirely absent. Another fascinating observation was that as we go through stress, our DNA sheds more and more of its light and quickly grows darker. Stress causes damage to the tissues of the body and can be as toxic as cigarette smoking. When healing needs to occur, our DNA apparently releases photons so the light can go make the repairs that are needed.” (p. 80)

For this chapter I am going to focus on the fact that our DNA absorbs light particles or photons and the fact that our DNA absorbs this light and also gives it off. As stated before, scientists call this light photons, but in a gospel sense we might call it the “Light of Christ.” Our bodies carry upwards of 920 trillion DNA strands and scientists estimate that each strand can hold up to 1000 photons. That is a lot of light or life energy. In the laboratory scientists have proven that when we focus on something or someone, we actually give off our photons or life energy to that thing or person. Many of us have experienced

when someone is staring at us and we feel it. Since they are focused on us they are sending their life energy or photons at us.

How many of us have attended a sporting event and have seen the effect the energy of the crowd has on the home team? The players even talk about “playing off of that energy.” Are they “soaking” it in? My wife and I attended an outdoor play in Southern Utah and were down front where we could see the actors sweat. It was fascinating watching the actors and to see how the energy of the audience affected them, just as the home team is affected by the roaring crowd. I have talked to friends that sing and act, they confirm they can “suck up” this energy from the audience. Several told me how it can become like a drug and gives them a high. I asked one guy that is nearly 60 years old why he keeps singing. His response, “Because they love me.” Does this mean that he feels he “needs” that energy or those photons from other people to keep going? Can it actually be an addiction? Have any of us experienced this crowd energy and found that it makes us more focused, we become sharper and more alert? Do our bodies become stronger, more energized and capable of greater endurance? Why do Hollywood people do basically anything to be in the public eye? Do they need us to focus on them in order to take our life energy or life essence? Does this feed, literally, their careers or does it become a necessity, a power source they live off of? I remember reading about a young actor in his twenties that had been convicted of drunk driving so they took his driver’s license away. He would ride his bicycle down to a busy street in Los Angeles and just stand there. When asked why he did this his response was so that people could see him and when they acknowledge him then he knew that he was still popular.

When our God declares that we are not to have any other Gods before Him, is there a reason for that? Is He just a jealous God that will strike you down if you give praise, honor and glory

to another god or is there more to it? When our church leaders walk into a room and we all stand up and focus on them, are we giving them our life energy? Should we be doing that? How about when the President of my church went to a Pioneer Day celebration and when he entered the room the crowd went nuts cheering for him like he was a rock star? Some say we should stand up out of respect or honor for a position or calling. Really? I know we are to sustain church leaders, but what exactly does that entail? Is it that we should pray for them, ask God to uphold them, or are we to send them our life energy through our adoration? And when God states that we are not to worship other Gods, exactly what does that mean and why? Can that mean pictures on the wall? How about statues of Jesus Christ or the Virgin Mary?

A good man that sings opera told me about his trip to Broadway in New York City. He attended two different shows. At one of them the main lead let you know it was all about him, he “sucked” in the energy of the audience and was completely self-centered. The main lead of the second show gave all he had to the audience, it was about them and presenting his best performance for those in attendance that night; he gave of himself to the audience. Which show do you think impressed this man the most? Clue – it wasn’t the self-centered, egotistical performance. Could it be that for this man the praise of men had become a drug, something he craved and needed, possibly to even keep himself going?

While chatting with a good friend about this concept, he made the comment that accepting this energy of adoration from others is poisonous. He has gone through a period in his life where there are many people that want to talk to him, be in his presence or even just touch him. They “adore” him and every word that comes from his mouth or off his word processor. He disdains all of this because he knows it is poison to the very soul.

Do we? Or do we like this particular brand of poison because it “tastes good and is delicious to the soul.” My friend will go out of his way to cuss or swear just so people won’t like him. Makes me wonder why the prophet Isaiah wandered around for three years naked. (Isa. 20:3) I have a feeling that many of the prophets might be people that you might not invite home for dinner, as they were a little bit different. Could there be a reason for that? Did they want to be different so people would stay away from them? Were they able to see this light and its transference and understood what was happening? It is very likely that true prophets are highly gifted individuals, being open to seeing spirits, both light and dark, energies and such. Would their “strangeness” make it less likely you’d offer them your adoration and praise which they would not want? “Welcome to dinner Bro. Isaiah. We have a fig leaf here for you; please put it on before our daughters arrive. And when they come in, please don’t stand up.”

One day during my meditation and prayers I was pondering this concept. The question came to me to ask how come many of the higher leaders in my church live into their nineties. The answer was because so many members in the church give them their adoration and worship, something that should only be reserved for God. This will actually send these leaders the life energy of those members helping them to live a longer life.

Does it come as a surprise that in this second estate the only being that can give you more life energy than you give out is our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ? This is one reason that during the workshops we have done the past four years we have nearly begged the attendees to go find the book, *Fools Crow: Wisdom and Power*, and read it. When Fools Crow prepared to heal someone, he connected to God and brought in God’s light or energy or “photons” into his body/DNA. He worked to become a “hollow bone” as he called it, that God could then fill

up with His light. He used this energy to heal. We will discuss Fools Crow and his ability to use this light for healing later.

Maybe we should focus more on the scriptures and Christ, His message, look to Him only, as He is the only One that can redeem us from the fall. If a great prophet comes along with an incredible message from the Lord, we should hear the message, but should we give adoration, praise, honor and glory to the messenger? This should be the same with everyone we meet or deal with, from church authorities to supposed rock stars. We praise our Father, and give Him ALL honor, glory and our adoration, just as His Son did. The Lord came to earth, learned line upon line, precept upon precept, did the atonement, died and resurrected Himself and yet what did He do?

“But, behold, my Beloved Son, which was my Beloved and Chosen from the beginning, said unto me—Father, thy will be done, and the glory be thine forever.” (Moses 4:2)

Should we do any less? From Wilcock’s book:

“Dr. Glen Rein, found that we can directly control how much light (photons) is being stored in someone else’s DNA. Loving, nurturing thoughts create a healing response, increasing the number of photons in the DNA, whereas sudden anger and aggression pulled the light right out of the molecule. In this case, the DNA was from an entirely different person’s body, in a tissue sample from a human placenta. Additionally, Dr. Rein’s participants could consciously control whether or not they were healing the DNA. When they intended to heal the DNA in the placenta, it worked, but if they just focused on being loving and did not direct their minds toward the DNA, the number of photons inside it remained unchanged.” (pp. 80-81)

Dr. Rein's scientific experiments suggest that as soon as we have a thought about someone—or even start thinking about a sample of living biological material—we automatically create a tunnel between us and the other object. Light immediately begins going between the two entities.

“We automatically create a tunnel between our own body and the life that we focus our attention on. Light immediately begins passing through the tunnel. These energetic passageways are not visible to us and have not yet been measured scientifically, but on a theoretical level, they have to be there in order to explain the observations of many different repeatable laboratory experiments.

“It appears, therefore, that there are two different forces at work in the new model of ‘energetic biology.’ We have light, providing the raw power of vitality, and we have another force that shapes, molds, and directs the light through invisible tunnels. Although it may seem like a strange concept right now...the force that shapes, molds, and directs the light, creating tunnels between life-forms (is) love.

“In this case it (love) becomes a very active force that generates invisible tunnel-like structures, allowing light to be transferred across various distances. Our thoughts create these tunnels. Anytime we have a thought about someone, a tunnel is automatically created in the Source Field between us and that person, and photons begin passing through it.” (Ibid. pp. 81-82)

Reading this immediately drew me back in time when Denise and I were driving down the road and I started talking

about the daughter that Dianne and I had lost. We pulled into the cemetery where her little body was laid to rest. I asked Denise how I could talk to Dawn or bring her there so I could talk to her.

“All you have to do is think of her,” she said.

So I did. I thought of her being in my sweet wife’s womb for all those months and then there was no movement. I thought of being there in the hospital where she was delivered and seeing her, how perfectly formed she was. I saw in my mind’s eye the umbilical cord wrapped around her neck some three plus times. I remembered the blanket we bought for her to be wrapped in and the little graveside service we had, how much love was there. I was doing what David Wilcock writes about in his book.

Denise said, “She’s here now.”

Wow, could it be that easy? Unbeknownst to me, I was sending light towards Dawn who was in another dimension, the spirit world or paradise as we call it, through a tunnel created by my love for her! Evidently that tunnel found her and connected and she knew I was thinking of her and she responded by coming to us there at the cemetery. At least that is what I thought, but this was soon to be expanded upon.

I called my friend, Kitten, for verification as it seemed there were missing pieces. I explained all of the above to her. Her response was, “That is all correct but it is missing several things. You also were sending out a call telepathically to Dawn. That is mind to mind communication; it has nothing to do with photons. She heard the call and felt the love coming to her. She then asked for permission to respond to your call and received it. Otherwise she would not have been allowed to come.”

I asked my daughter Denise the same question since this book

is about getting help from both of these gifted women. She agreed with all that was said above but put some qualifiers on it. For instance, she made the statement that she doesn't think that Jesus Christ would need permission to come and talk to someone in that instance. I am sure she is right. I have shared how Dawn sought permission to return to live a full life since she was stillborn and didn't have the chance. She needed permission to do that. Also a time when our two youngest children, still yet in the spirit world, received permission to appear to me in order to deliver a message.

Wilcock makes the assumption in his book that these photons can be encoded with the information from our own thoughts and that "creates a practical mechanism for telepathic communication to occur." I have had experiences with telepathic communication and his assumption just didn't seem correct; that is why I sought further understanding.

But he does go on to make an astounding statement.

"These two forces (photons and love) can be assigned genders – light being the masculine force that projects outward and provides raw power in the photon, and love being the feminine force that shapes, molds, and directs the light. Psychologically, we need to balance these two personality characteristics, or 'archetypes,' in our own lives in order to be healthy." (Ibid. p. 82)

This is a concept we will explore more fully in this work as it is quite profound. We will discuss the esoteric principle that it is the male that reaches out or sends out, and it is the female that awaits the reaching or sending. For example, our Sun is male and sends out light towards our earth which is female and receives it, using his male energy combined with her love to bring forth life. Seems the same is accomplished between a mortal male and female. When these two principles are out of

balance the result is dis-ease. Interesting. Lest we digress any more let's get back to photons or light.

Dr. Glen Rein also observed in his DNA experiments that angry people pulled photons out of the DNA of the human placenta; whereas people feeling love were able to send additional photons into the same DNA. This bodes well for healing and understanding some of the process. It also helps us understand how people can be "energy vampires." Something most all of us have experienced. Also as soon as we have angry thoughts towards someone, a connection is made. Wilcock calls it a tunnel, and we immediately try to take their photons or light/energy. Typically to do this successfully we have to break the other person down. We do this by causing them to have negative emotions about themselves, things like guilt, fear, shame, sadness, depression, anger, disgust, terror, or shock. This can be blocked if the person on the receiving end of the anger stays in a firm but loving stance, and doesn't allow the other person to bully them. They also need to stay out of negative emotions. One way to protect yourself that was discussed extensively in our first book is to shield yourself against others. We taught much about that, but here I need to add that it is also important to shield yourself against the negative thoughts and emotions of others, especially dark entities or in this instance angry people. If we do this, our own vital energy will not be lost and we will have the protection we need, besides not allowing the negative entities to attach to us.

Wilcock relates an experiment that was done by a Russian scientist Dr. A. B. Burlakov:

"In this case, Burlakov placed growing fish eggs near each other, so photons could pass freely between them. When he put older, more mature eggs in front of younger, newer eggs, the older eggs literally

pulled the health right out of the younger eggs. The younger eggs soon developed obvious health problems, including withering, deformities, and even death. Thus, it deemed that the older eggs were directly absorbing life-force out of the younger, weaker eggs—feeding on them for their own survival. This same mechanism can also allow us to transfer health to others as well. When slightly younger eggs were placed near slightly older eggs in Burlakov’s experiment, the younger eggs actually sped up in their development—and experienced accelerated growth until they reached the same apparent age level as the older eggs.

“Interestingly, these healing or weakening effects could be totally blocked by putting a pane of glass between the two sealed rooms holding the eggs. This is almost certainly due to the fact that glass blocks ultraviolet light. The glass does not block the micro-gravitational field in the stronger eggs from pulling photons out of the weaker eggs. The weaker eggs still shed their photons. However, once those photons are released, they bump against the glass, reflect back into the room, and are reabsorbed by other eggs. Therefore, there is no net loss of energy—even as the gravitational force from the stronger eggs continues pulling on the photons of the weaker ones.” (Ibid. p. 85)

Isn’t shielding great? Even if it is a glass shield.

If we are the one that is angry towards another individual and they are not shielded or protected, or firm in the love of Jesus Christ then we draw light out of the DNA of that person’s entire body. Something we have no right to do. This is one of the processes that spiritual vampires use against us in order

to keep themselves going. Could it also be one of the reasons that some individuals love to bully others? They actually get the other persons energy coming to them. If the bully has entities attached this is surely the case as the entities feed off of this energy, as does the bully.

Wilcock points out:

“If we are successful is absorbing energy from someone—if the other person withers in the presence of our anger—then we draw light out of the storehouse of DNA throughout that person’s entire body. This provides us with an immediate source of energy. We become more alert and energized—though this is also a cold, thin, and hollow way to restore ourselves and lacks the richness and complexity that naturally fills us when we feel genuine love. Absorbing energy from someone else is the negative path—and it guarantees that whatever you take from others will soon be taken from you in a similar fashion.” (Ibid. p. 84)

As stated this is also one of the many processes that the adversary uses against us. Many of us are nothing but batteries to those entities, since they require our life force or energy in order to live and keep doing their master’s bidding, something they cannot create themselves. And they have no problem attaching themselves to us in order to keep us in a state of anger, depression, guilt or any of hundreds of negative emotions, thereby allowing them to drain our life force out of us.

In a spiritual sense we would call these tunnels bonds or attachments. My daughter Denise talked about one of the positive aspects of these “tunnels” where she called it a “tube of light” in her book, *In His Arms*.

“One of my favorite things to look at spiritually is the connection between a husband and wife. There is a spiritual connection that I see from the man’s heart to the heart of his wife. It also goes from her heart to his. It is like a ‘tube of light,’ kind of. I don’t have the ability to really describe what it looks like. It is ‘light’ though and also is alive or living.

“There are different colors to it, depending on where the man and woman are in their relationship to each other and to God. The closer they become like Heavenly Father and Heavenly Mother, the closer to a gold color it becomes. The more they listen to the adversary and have a terrible marriage, the closer to black or darkness it becomes.” (pp. 158-159)

This chapter is well worth reading in her book. Actually the entire book is worthwhile and has much to offer.

My friend, Kitten, chimed in with these words:

“Those tunnels look like the tubes Denise and I have spoken of. Those are what attach between others or some can end up being detached and simply in the air like strings. Depending on the strength of the emotions, those tubes (tunnels, attachments) have colors and sizes. In my opinion the best and prettiest ones are the glowing gold and white with tinges of blue. People who have considerable love, respect and a Godly peace between them have those, most of which are husband and wife. The best, I have seen, are the attachments between an old couple who have been married for years. Then there are the shades of red to black ones (shudder). Bad Juju for sure.”

Chapter 13

UNDERSTANDINGS

When I was younger I just couldn't understand why during the time of Adam to the flood they were able to live hundreds of years and during our lifetime the average man lives to about 72 yrs. of age. Are we just better than they were, and so we need fewer years to get it right and become redeemed? I somehow doubt that. It helps knowing that we have been working out our salvation and exaltation by doing this for a long time and will continue if we wish to be more and do more. But we could always just choose to stop and become an angel by putting down our stakes. Joseph Smith stated: *"The great thing for us to know is to comprehend what God did institute before the foundation of the world. Who knows it? It is the constitutional disposition of mankind to set up stakes and set bounds to the works and ways of the Almighty."* (TPJS, p. 320, emphasis added). The Gods of light will give us whatever we desire, though it is their desire for us to join with them. But if we choose *"to set up stakes"* and stop our progression towards becoming like them, that is okay. Over the years I have come to accept that some of us like being in Junior Sunday School and being fed a diet of pabulum as we point our fingers at others, mocking the fact that they desire and want more. Of course our Heavenly Parents want us to become like them, but allow us our will to do as we wish. It has amazed me that our "Christian" brothers declare that those wanting to become like their Heavenly Father are

blasphemous, while their declared desire is to become like the angels. So be it, and God bless them in their desires. But then my own church went from what Joseph taught, that we should seek out the mysteries, to our day when we are counseled not to do so. What gives? Are we becoming mainstream Christian? Do we really just want to limit our progression?

I know that when I went through the temple endowment Satan was asked what he was doing. He replied that he was doing that which has been done on other worlds. I always thought he was talking about Father's other creations, not that I was involved in any of them. I figured I had my 72 years to work it out and that I'd "make it." But then I'd see a 24 yr. old transition and I'd wonder if I really understood what was going on. I didn't. Later I would grow up to see much more in the scriptures through my own studies, the Prophet Joseph Smith, and others the Lord brought into my life. The gifted or sighted people have been a great blessing in understanding much and witnessing what I have learned over the years. Then through fortuitous circumstances the Lord brought Denver Snuffer into my life. I read his first book, *The Second Comforter*, soon after it was published and realized that this man had indeed done what the Book of Mormon and Joseph Smith taught and sought for others to receive—the Second Comforter. This man did it! I praised God and rejoiced. Then I met him. "Wow," I thought. "He's normal, he doesn't walk on water, he cusses at times, he has problems, has to work a job, he lives life like I have to, probably gets bad breath and stinks when he sweats," and I loved it all. I knew that many of the prophets of old were not people you'd invite home for dinner, though I'd have no problem inviting Snuffer over. (I've mentioned in a previous book about Bro. Isaiah and his walking around naked for three years.). Then my church excommunicated this man. I praised God for that because it allowed him to open up and teach things never before considered

by many. We are going to look at a few things that Denver has taught in this chapter and see how it opens up the Gospel in new and profound ways.

Repeated Cycles of Creation

In his book, *Preserving the Restoration*, Snuffer mentions over and over about the cycles of creation: *“God has been doing this a long time. Christ has been involved in many repeated cycles of creation. Moses was told: ‘by the word of my power have I created them, which is mine Only Begotten Son, who is full of grace and truth. And worlds without number have I created; and I also created them for mine own purpose; and by the Son I created them, which is mine Only Begotten.’ (Moses 1:32-33) It is endless and it is cyclical. ‘For behold, there are many worlds that have passed away by the word of my power. And there are many that now stand, and innumerable are they unto man but all things are numbered unto me, for they are mine and I know them.’ (Ibid. v. 35). This is God’s great work. It has been going through cycles of creation, fall, redemption, judgment and re-creation forever. It is endless. Many numbered worlds have been, now are, and will yet be. The Lord told Moses just how vast this process is. ‘The heavens, they are many, and they cannot be numbered unto man; but they are numbered unto me, for they are mine. And as one earth shall pass away, and the heavens thereof even so shall another come; and there is no end to my works; neither my words’. (Ibid. vs. 37-38). This is a continual, endless cycle, worlds without end.” (pp. 321-322)*

In other words, we have done this many times, for many eons. *“Man falls into the cold realm of the temporal, but is returned again to the spiritual. The process allows incremental development based on choices. When any cycle begins, man is spirit. When it is underway, man is temporal and physical. But when a cycle ends, man is spirit again. We are nearing another turn of the wheel when wickedness ends.” (Ibid. p. 322)*

Christ becomes a Father

The Lord Jesus Christ declared: *“Behold, I am he who was prepared from the foundation of the world to redeem my people. Behold, I am Jesus Christ. I am the Father and the Son. In me shall all mankind have life, and that eternally, even they who shall believe on my name; and they shall become my sons and my daughters.”* (Ether 3:14). After this scripture Snuffer goes on to say: *“This is the way we may become sons of God. **The One who redeems us becomes our Father**, and therefore He who is the Only Begotten of the Father in turn ‘begets many sons and daughters.’”* (Preserving the Restoration, p. 329, emphasis added)

This does not mean that we lose the relationship with our Father. He still is our Father, and His wife is still our Mother. It just means that there is now a new relationship that lasts through the eternities with the One who redeems us, whether it happens here on this world in this eternal round, or it happens many eternal rounds down the road on a different world with a different Christ as we progress to the point of becoming redeemed. Our Father and Mother still work with their Parents and their Christ. I personally know two people that our Lord Jesus Christ has redeemed, and I know that the relationship they now have with Him will last forever as they continue up Jacob’s ladder in their progression. He will always be a part of it since He “begat” them as a son and daughter. The title we are given for this is Father, in the respect that since He “begat” them through much work and effort on both their parts.

Joseph Smith and Sidney Rigdon received this information found in D&C 76:

“And while we were yet in the spirit, the Lord commanded us that we should write the vision; for we beheld Satan, that old serpent, even the devil, who rebelled against God, and sought to take the kingdom of our God and his Christ.”
(vs. 28, emphasis added)

There will be some who declare that “and his Christ” means our Lord Jesus Christ. Please go pray about it with the new understanding that when a Christ redeems you, you will have an ongoing relationship with that Christ. Are there other Christs? *“The son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.”* (John 5:19) Well, when our Lord Jesus Christ declares that He is doing what He saw His Father do, what exactly does that mean? Was our Father a Christ? Apparently so, if you believe Jesus, John, Joseph Smith, and many others. From a talk that Joseph Smith gave we learn:

“What did Jesus do? Why; I do the things I saw my Father do when worlds come rolling into existence. My Father worked out his kingdom with fear and trembling, and I must do the same; and when I get my kingdom, I shall present it to my Father, so that he may obtain kingdom upon kingdom, and it will exalt him in glory. He will then take a higher exaltation, and I will take his place, and thereby become exalted myself. So that Jesus treads in the tracks of his Father, and inherits what God did before, and God is thus glorified and exalted in the salvation and exaltation of all his children. It is plain beyond disputation, and you thus learn some of the first principles of the Gospel, about which so much has been said.” (WJS, p. 345, emphasis added)

Could our Father have been a Christ on other worlds as He worked His way up Jacob’s ladder to become our Father? If Jesus is “treading in the tracks of his Father”, does that mean we must also tread in those tracks if we want what they have? Is there a “Christ line” or track, for lack of a better term? When the scriptures state that our Lord Jesus Christ is the prototypical man and that we must become exactly like Him, what does

that mean? Could one of many definitions be that many eons of time from now we could earn the opportunity to become a Christ, and then we can say that we are doing exactly what our Father did? Or will we remain hard-hearted, blind, and lacking faith so that we can continue worlds without end, never rising up to become like our Father (Mother) and our Christ.

For those women who are freaking out, no, you don't personally perform an Atonement, but the woman's role is vital to the Christ (her husband) because He can't accomplish it without her. I have seen part of the atonement of our Lord Jesus Christ, and I watched as he had His head on His wife's lap. She was sending Him all the love she could possibly send. That is how a man gets through his ordeals, his suffering. And believe me, she feels all of it with him, but without her, it would be nigh impossible to accomplish what must be done. That is why God is Man and Woman; they are One; they have been through all these things together. Some of the sighted will talk privately of this; others just declare that when the Father comes, He comes with an entourage, hoping we will take the clue and go ask just what that means. A woman is typically a man's "fail safe." It is my belief that most woman have no clue what the real love from a woman will do for a man. In fact, he is not a man until he earns that love, and she willingly gives it, so they become one in all facets of their dance in our God's creation.

Experience is required

In *Preserving the Restoration* Denver Snuffer talked about how experience is required. He quoted Joseph Smith: "*Hence Joseph's remark, 'it will be a great while after the grave before' we will rise up to be gods ourselves. Do not sleep any longer. Awake and Arise! There is a great deal to be done. There is no magic involved. There is only incremental progression from grace to grace. All must 'learn to be gods' by experience. We too must learn to break the bonds of death,*

as Christ did. But we develop here, and receive from this experience what we are willing to accomplish by our heed and diligence." (p. 315, emphasis added)

I love the fact that we develop here in mortality. This is where the game is afoot, where we prove ourselves and grow. Yes, there is growth in a pre-mortal spiritual classroom, but not like down here in this low-level, hell-like world. The main opposition required for growth is on an earth. We also know that this experience is not singular. We've been at this for a long time, gaining line upon line, precept upon precept, and experience upon experience from worlds without end. The Lord told Moses, *"The heavens, they are many, and they cannot be numbered unto man; but they are numbered unto me, for they are mine. And as one earth shall pass away, and the heavens thereof even so shall another come; and there is no end to my works; neither to my words."* (Moses 1:37-38) *"The process has been underway a long time. It is this process through which God has obtained the knowledge necessary to identify who would have faith and choose to do good. The qualifying experiences happened before this cycle of creation. In the present world, it is called 'foreknowledge' because it was learned before this creation where we presently live. Similarly, what is now happening proves what you are for all that will come after."* (p. 319, emphasis added)

It cannot all be learned in a "premortal" classroom

If we could learn and understand all we needed to know in a classroom, God would not keep making these incredible laboratories we call Earths for us to come to. It requires us to gain a mortal body, take upon us flesh in order to truly understand what we are taught in the heavenly realms. *"God has been at this a long time. Christ has been involved in many repeated cycles of creation. Moses was told: 'by the word of my power have I created them, which is mine Only Begotten Son, who is full of grace and truth.*

And worlds without number have I created; and I also created them for mine own purpose; and by the Son I created them, which is mine Only Begotten.’ (Moses 1:32-33) It is endless and it is cyclical. ‘For behold, there are many worlds that have passed away by the word of my power. And there are many that now stand, and innumerable are they unto man but all things are numbered unto me, for they are mine and I know them.’”(Moses 1:35)

Snuffer put it this way: *“This round of creation is only part of the cycle. We are part of endless cycles.”* (p. 320) *“This is God’s great work. It has been going through cycles of creation, fall, redemption, judgment and recreation forever. It is endless. Many unnumbered worlds have been, now are, and will yet be.”* (Ibid. pp. 320-321). Continuing with what Denver wrote: *“Before this world was organized from an already existing and previously used creation, the condition was ‘spiritual.’ But it fell and became the temporal place as present; though patterned after the earlier world where we used to live in a spiritual state. Its present condition will be destroyed and it will return again to a spiritual state. It will be ‘quickenened’ and no longer the cold, lone and dreary place of today.”* (Ibid. p. 322-323) We do this over and over, cycles without end until we become redeemed and then keep ascending the ladder until we attain the resurrection ourselves. In order to progress and become like the gods, it requires us to descend into a “mortal” state, take upon us flesh in order to perfect ourselves, to learn our lessons we were taught from the spiritual realms. We then transition and do it over again, worlds without number.

Attained unto the Resurrection

In *Preserving the Restoration* we read this about our Lord Jesus Christ and also what Joseph Smith explained:

“[Christ’s] ascent up Jacob’s ladder is complete and He has ‘attained unto the resurrection.’ He accomplished that through a very different mortal experience than ours. That is how the plan operates and

the way God's children all must develop... This does not mean merely coming forth from the grave, although that is 'resurrection' also. Joseph Smith more accurately referred to it as an achievement following exaltation: '[Y]ou have got to learn how to be Gods yourselves, and to be kings and priests to God, the same as all Gods have done before you, namely by going from one small degree to another, and from a small capacity to a great one; from grace to grace, from exaltation to exaltation, until you attain to the resurrection of the dead, and are able to dwell in everlasting burnings, and to sit in glory, as do those who sit enthroned in everlasting burnings.' (TPJS, pp. 346-347)" (Ibid. p. 347)

If we have not "*attain[ed] to the resurrection of the dead,*" our Lord Jesus Christ will resurrect us at the end of this creative cycle or eternal round. But in order to become like Him, we too, "*must learn to break the bonds of death, as Christ did.*" Until He learned how to break those bonds of death and resurrect Himself, someone else had to do it for Him, just as it happens with us.

It is interesting how many believe that it has been declared that we have all of the truth—the fullness of the gospel. Don't we believe that "*He will yet reveal many great and important things pertaining to the Kingdom of God?*" Are we open to what Joseph Smith declared: "*One of the grand fundamental principles of 'Mormonism' is to receive truth, let it come from whence it may.*" (TPJS, p. 313). What about those things that sit in our scriptures and we don't see them or talk about them? D&C 130:10-11 tells us that those who make it to the "Celestial Kingdom" will receive a white stone, which "*will become a Urim and Thummim to each individual who receives one, whereby things pertaining to a higher order of kingdoms will be made known.*" What?! If I make it to the Celestial Kingdom I will be given a stone that will allow me to learn about a higher order of kingdoms? Are we open to new and deeper, more complete truths which sit

openly in our own scriptures, and we don't even see or read them? Are these higher kingdoms above the Celestial Kingdom called Celestial burnings? Do these Gods have to condescend to come down to the Celestial Kingdom to help others? Is that as painful as Gods who condescend from that kingdom to come here and prove us? Just wondering. Are we open to new truths, no matter the source? Or have we been brainwashed to believe that God only reveals truth to one man? If that is the case, then is Joseph Smith a liar?

How was the Lord able to accomplish all He did?

Was it necessary for even the Lord Jesus Christ to become flesh over and over, just like it is for us? Of course it was. He said in Abraham, *"I am the Lord thy God, I am more intelligent than they all."* (3:19) From Snuffer's *Preserving the Restoration*: *"He was more intelligent because He grew from grace to grace until He understood all things, because he had been through all things, He had descended below all things, and had risen above all things, therefore He comprehends all things. He is more intelligent than we are because He has experienced more than we have. He has arrived at a state where He is worthy, holy, and sanctified. Having been left to choose between good and evil, He has chosen the good."* (p. 330, emphasis added)

What does Snuffer mean when he said the Lord "had descended below all things?" D&C 88:6 talks about the Lord Jesus Christ: *"He that ascended up on high, as also he descended below all things, in that he comprehended all things, that he might be in all and through all things, the light of truth."* If experience must be gained in the flesh, how does one descend below all things so that He can comprehend all things so that He can be in and through all things? Does all things include both good and evil? If it is only one and not the other, then how can it be "all things?" Must one travel the full spectrum of light in order to understand it?

Duality or Opposition

A coin has two sides like good and evil and is called duality. Peace and war, love and hate, up and down, and black and white are dualities or what we call opposites. There are many other definitions and philosophies about duality.

We know that opposition here in mortality is “required in all things.” (Bummer, huh?) Is there ever a case when this ceases? Are they really opposites? Let’s consider hot and cold. First, it might be just a matter of perspective. Fifty-nine degrees to someone in Alaska might be considered “hot” while someone in Phoenix, AZ might consider it “cold.” I’ve been in Arizona when it is 59 degrees and most of the locals are wearing coats or jackets, but I’m in shirt sleeves and loving it. However, they seem to endure 115 degrees much better than I do.

It is interesting that hot and cold are just measures of temperature on the same scale. We humans declare one measurement on that scale to be hot and another cold. But are they really opposites? How about the opposites of light and dark? Are they really opposites or is dark just a lack of light. Is there a scale of “lightness?”

Lehi taught about duality to his sons in 2 Nephi 2:11-16:

“For it must needs be, that there is an opposition in all things. If not so, my firstborn in the wilderness, righteousness could not be brought to pass, neither wickedness, neither holiness nor misery, neither good nor bad. Wherefore, all things must needs be a compound in one; wherefore, if it should be one body it must needs remain as dead, having no life neither death, nor corruption nor incorruption, happiness nor misery, neither sense nor insensibility.

“Wherefore, it must needs have been created for a thing of naught; wherefore there would have been no purpose in the end of its creation. Wherefore, this thing must needs

destroy the wisdom of God and his eternal purposes, and also the power, and the mercy, and the justice of God.

“And if ye shall say there is no law, ye shall also say there is no sin. If ye shall say there is no sin, ye shall also say there is no righteousness. And if there be no righteousness there be no happiness. And if there be no righteousness nor happiness there be no punishment nor misery. And if these things are not there is no God. And if there is no God we are not, neither the earth; for there could have been no creation of things, neither to act nor to be acted upon; wherefore, all things must have vanished away.

“And now, my sons, I speak unto you these things for your profit and learning; for there is a God, and he hath created all things, both the heavens and the earth, and all things that in them are, both things to act and things to be acted upon.

“And to bring about his eternal purposes in the end of man, after he had created our first parents, and the beasts of the field and the fowls of the air, and in fine, all things which are created, it must needs be that there was an opposition; even the forbidden fruit in opposition to the tree of life; the one being sweet and the other bitter.

“Wherefore, the Lord God gave unto man that he should act for himself. Wherefore, man could not act for himself save it should be that he was enticed by the one or the other.”

Granted, we need “an opposition” so we can “act for (ourselves)” or make a choice. It’s always about choice isn’t it? We have opposites so we can be “enticed by the one or the other.” If there is no choice, we would cease to exist.

Even God the Father and Christ have opposites:

“And this we saw also, and bear record, that an angel of God who was in authority in the presence of God, who rebelled against the Only Begotten Son whom the Father loved and who was in the bosom of the Father, was thrust down from the presence of God and the Son. And was called Perdition, for the heavens wept over him—he was Lucifer, a son of the morning. And we beheld, and lo, he is fallen! is fallen, even a son of the morning!

And while we were yet in the Spirit, the Lord commanded us that we should write the vision; for we beheld Satan, that old serpent, even the devil, who rebelled against God, and sought to take the kingdom of our God and his Christ—” (D&C 76:25-28, emphasis added)

I really like this scripture because it plainly states that Lucifer fights against the Only Begotten Son—the Lord Jesus Christ—and that Satan fights against God the Father. This scripture also plainly shows that Lucifer and Satan are two different people. When Denise had her second NDE at age fourteen, the Lord Jesus Christ took her on a tour of hell. When it was time to meet Satan, the Father came and took over the “tour.” When she was done talking with Satan, the Father turned her back over to the Lord Jesus Christ. (It is little things like this that fascinate me.) When our God declared that all things must have opposition, He really did mean all things, even Himself.

When we know our God’s law and make a choice that goes against it, we suffer the consequences because there are punishments affixed to the law, *“For behold, justice exerciseth all his demands.”* (Alma 42:24) God doesn’t have to do a thing, because our disobedience brings about natural consequences. He just stands back or withdraws. First, He withdraws His Spirit, and

if we don't repent, it gets worse from there.

How about good and evil? Is that also a measurement of light? Though we do know that those without much light tend to be quite evil and those of much light get that way by being what we'd call "good." But suppose a man is born into the church of Satan, and that is all he knows. He then determines to faithfully serve the only god he knows, and he does so. In fact suppose he is so faithful that he "translates" (they say "ascends") into darkness. We know from the scriptures that ALL things have their opposites. As it states in the first verse above: *"For it must needs be, that there is an opposition in all things."* So on the scale of light we have beings whose God of Light translated them into light, i.e. Alma, John the Beloved, Moses, Three Nephites, Jesus on the Mount of Transfiguration, among others. So would not the god of darkness be able to do the same for his followers? Of course, or our Father is a liar.

If this person who obeyed his god enough to translate into what we call "evil" or darkness knows nothing of our God of Light, and he has obeyed his god to the best of his ability, **from our Father's perspective would this man be considered "righteous?"** Righteous meaning that he obeyed the laws that he had been given from his god. As a result he became an ascended being (translated) of darkness. It was done in righteousness.

Consider the following from the Book of Mormon in 2 Nephi 9:25-27 (emphasis added):

"Wherefore, he has given a law; and where there is no law given there is no punishment; and where there is no punishment there is no condemnation; and where there is no condemnation the mercies of the Holy One of Israel have claim upon them, because of the atonement; for they are delivered by the power of him.

“For the atonement satisfieth the demands of his justice upon all those who have not the law given to them, that they are delivered from that awful monster, death and hell, and the devil, and the lake of fire and brimstone, which is endless torment; and they are restored to that God who gave them breath, which is the Holy One of Israel.

“But wo unto him that has the law given, yea, that has all the commandments of God, like unto us, and that transgresseth them, and that wasteth the days of his probation, for awful is his state!”

Would it be possible to come to an earth and be born into evil? To become evil itself in order to know it? And if that person had no other law given, he would not be accountable to God’s law, just the laws his god gave him? Would it still require a Christ and an atonement to get that person out? What would be the reason to do this? Is there a reason to do this? To go below all things, it is required to know darkness and all its affects. The only way to KNOW is to experience it. Without that experience no one is able to advance as the Gods of Light have. Hence experiencing the entire scale of light (unimaginable absence of light to unimaginable light) is a necessity for advancement. It is a choice.

Addendum:

After I finished this book, I had my two friends who have been redeemed read this chapter. I wanted to know if they had any problems with it. I figured the one might not, since I quote him extensively in it. He told me what he felt about it and that is why I’m adding this addendum. The other, Kitten, I asked for a witness that the book was completely finished. She told me the Lord told her no. So I asked her if I added this addendum would He then consider it finished. “Yes,” she replied.

When I first heard the doctrine that we have been involved in and will still be involved in cycles of creation, I soundly rejected the idea. This earth is so hard that I couldn't have imagined doing this for "repeated cycles of creation." I figured I wasn't that nuts.

After much reading of the scriptures, prayer, meditation, and talking to the sighted people I have mentioned, I realized that it really wasn't like I had imagined. When we are "birthed" as spirits, which can happen when we make a choice as an intelligence to be like our Mother or our Father, we are taught in their Kingdom, the Celestial realms.

After much class time and when they feel we are ready to have a "lab" experience, we will enter a mortality in the celestial realms. We will have an earth-type experience there. I once asked Kitten who would provide the opposition there, as I couldn't imagine coming here to this world with no prior experience and having to endure this much opposition.

Her answer: "We did. We are brothers and sisters; we argue and fight." Meaning that whenever there is choice, there is opposition. We provided our own. We progressed from there to "repeated cycles of creation."

This world has a fallen God that is providing the opposition—Satan. Our brother, his nephew, Lucifer, followed him and is part of his godhead. That does not happen on many worlds. That is why it is so hard here. The man I quote often in this chapter had told me that "Five minutes on this world is worth an eternal round on any other one." It is that hard and unique here on this world. Because of this, there is the chance for exponential growth—in either direction. We volunteered to come here knowing how hard it would be—though I do believe that many of us are quite shocked at how hard it really is. But in the suffering, we grow; we merit greater exaltations because much

is learned that would take many worlds and eons of time to understand. Because of how hard this world is, there are many days I wished we could learn all of what we need to know in the classroom to become like our Parents. But this laboratory experience is required in order to comprehend what is required to know.

Recapping what I have stated. We were birthed in the Celestial realms as spirits by our Heavenly Parents. We had classwork there to learn many things that eventually required a mortal experience to put that classwork to the test. We progressed through repeated cycles of creation, progressing in hardness to the Telesstial realms for more “lab work.” Now, while still in our Father’s kingdom—the Milky Way Galaxy as we call it—we are on the furthest edge in this solar system having a “lab experience” with a fallen God providing the opposition. That is why it is “hell” here, unlike most of our previous cycles of creation.

Further Knowledge:

“This planet is the ONLY planet with such brutal opposition! It is very unique for it is endowed with exceptional strength and has others inhabiting her who possess the supernumerary power to resist the great evil of a fallen god. No other planet has nor will be required to harbor such severe malevolency. A fallen god is so exceedingly rare not even our Heavenly Parents nor the Heavenly multi-Grand-Parents have any such living memory of one. The colossal evil of our mortal realm is confined to this planet and none other. Satan may be able to wander many areas of darkness, but is well confined, being unable to advance beyond what the innumerable Gods of Light allow.

“We chose to be born on this planet to greatly accel-

erate our learning and experience. This is also one of the only places the children of Satan are able to see, for themselves, just what their Father-God is truly like. By experience, they can make a clear informed choice of which way they honestly would like to go: To Light, life, and love or to abject darkness and evil.”

Chapter 14

A PARABLE

A meeting of the Council of the Gods of Light had been called. They assembled, and the couple entered the meeting chamber along with the Lord Jesus Christ. Father Michael Adam Christ introduced the couple to the council, but they knew of them long before. This event had been known and planned for eons of time.

Father Michael spoke and said that the couple were ready for the next part of their journey on becoming part of the Gods of Light in preparation for a specialized mission long in the future. Seth and his bonded spouse were ready to continue further on the path of the Christs. An earth had been selected where a fallen God ruled and reigned with blood and horror. Seth would be born into that world and would be under the tutelage of that God of Darkness, becoming evil itself and eventually a Son of Satan. The fail-safe would be his bonded wife whose love he would feel during his ministry into hell and evil. By doing this he would become as the other Christs and descend below all things, thereby knowing evil by becoming evil. The Gods of Light understand the only way to know is to experience, and without that experience no one is able to advance as the Gods of Light have. By doing this they would be experiencing the entire scale of light (unimaginable absence of light to unimaginable light) that is a necessity for advancement.

The fail-safe is required to bring the man back to the Light. It is only through love that this can be accomplished, the love of a bonded wife and helpmate. They had been in preparation for this on many worlds, through many cycles of creation in untold eternal rounds. Instructions were given and the Council approved their journey. It was decided Seth would enter this phase of mortality during the time of Prophet Moses. As had been done on all other worlds, a Savior would be provided to atone for what he would go through and do. The journey would be done in righteousness because he would have no other law than that of his soon-to-be evil God. Nevertheless, the atonement will be required to cleanse him of the darkness and evil that he would become.

After much council they were sent on their journey.

During the time of Moses, Korah, one of the rich leaders of the Levites, and a cousin of Moses and Aaron, felt that he had been slighted and overlooked in the distribution of the highest priestly honors and leadership. He envied Moses and Aaron, and also his cousin Elzaphan who had been put in charge of the Levites after Aaron's family had become elevated to the rank of Kohanim (Priests). Realizing that despite his riches and influence he alone could do very little to shake the people's faith and confidence in Moses and Aaron, Korah looked for associates in his campaign against them.

Korah went to the people of the tribe of Reuben, his neighbors in the camping order. Being daily in close contact with them, Korah easily swayed the opinions of their leaders and drew them into his conspiracy. Amongst the Reubenites were two men, Dathan and Abiram, who since their early days in Egypt had been trouble makers and the ringleaders of disaffection and rebellion. They were the first to rally to the party of Korah, and they were his most eager agents among their tribesmen. Their

experienced and clever campaigning, aided by Korah's riches, influence, and knowledge, induced as many as 250 respected leaders of the Jewish camp to join the rebellion. They now felt bold enough to go out into the open and speak out against Moses' leadership of the people. Adopting the mantle of piety and justice and pretending to be a champion of his people, Korah accused Moses and Aaron of imposing their leadership upon the community. "You take too much upon yourselves, for the entire congregation is all holy, and the Lord is in their midst. So why do you raise yourselves above the Lord's assembly?" said Korah and his men to Moses and Aaron. (Numbers 16:3)

When Moses heard of the public accusations made against him by members of the tribe of Levi and their associates, he prayed to God for guidance in his new tribulation. Then he addressed himself to Korah and his party, and told them to prepare themselves for the next day when God would show whom He considered worthy to serve Him as priests. All the contestants were to take censers and offer incense before God. God would then show whether He approved of the act. Moses spoke to Korah privately and warned him against his lust for personal honor. "Is it not enough that the God of Israel has distinguished you from the congregation of Israel to draw you near to Him, to perform the service in the Tabernacle of the Lord and to stand before the congregation to minister to them?" Moses said. (Numbers 16:9) But his words fell on deaf ears.

After his unsuccessful talk with Korah, Moses sent for Dathan and Abiram, ringleaders of the rebellion among the non-Levites. However, they replied with their usual arrogance (Numbers 16:12-13): "We will not go up. Is it not enough that you have brought us out of a land flowing with milk and honey to kill us in the desert, that you should also exercise authority over us?" Moses was deeply hurt by this venomous attack upon his leadership, and he prayed to God to expose the wickedness of

these people before the entire congregation of Israel.

The next morning Korah's associates appeared before the Tabernacle with censers, as Moses had told them to do. With them were the entire community whom Korah had called to witness the proceedings. God told Moses to order the children of Israel to separate themselves from Korah and his associates and everything that belonged to them for fear that they share the rebels' fate. Again Moses and the Elders approached Dathan and Abiram in a last minute effort to induce them to repent of their sin. However, it was in vain, and Moses ordered the rest of the people to depart from the tents of Dathan and Abiram. The people obeyed. Dathan and Abiram and their families stood in front of their tents and in a defiant mood continued to abuse Moses.

Gravely, Moses told the children of Israel (Numbers 16:28): "With this you shall know that the Lord sent me to do all these deeds, for I did not devise them myself. If these men die as all men die and the fate of all men will be visited upon them, then the Lord has not sent me. But if the Lord creates a creation, and the earth opens its mouth and swallows them and all that is theirs, and they descend alive into the grave, you will know that these men have provoked the Lord." Hardly had Moses finished speaking, when the earth cleft asunder, and swallowed Korah and his associates with their families and belongings. They were buried alive and perished by a terrible death that made the people who stood nearby flee in terror. The next instant a fire from heaven devoured the 250 men who had dared contest Aaron's priestly authority by offering incense.

Not all of the family agreed with Dathan, Abiram, and Korah. One of the wives of Abiram, Meriham, who was with child, along with her attendants, having heard the warning, quickly moved away from what she viewed was her stubborn fool of a

husband and removed well away with full intent of leaving to protect her unborn infant.

Meriham continued moving away from the main body of the Israelites seeking to depart the area for fear that she and her attendants would be destroyed. She felt driven to be as far away from them as possible. Even though she did not fully agree with all Moses taught or did, she had agreed less with her now deceased husband. She had been somewhat rebellious towards the man recognizing he was not only stubborn but also determined to rule in ways that were dangerous. It was good to be rid of him.

She and her attendants gathered all they could and departed the Israelite camp. They traveled two months with judicious care and were able to arrive in the large city of Tyre, Phoenicia. At six months of pregnancy she determined it would be well to seek another man for support. She found a wealthy merchant willing to take her as his wife.

The people of the area mainly worshiped two specific gods: Baal and Astarte who gave pleasure and wealth, both of which she now worshiped, abandoning the former religion. She dutifully taught her unborn child all she learned of the new religion. She sought out various teachers to learn all she could of their new religion. These teachers approached her to see if this was her first child, and her attendants verified it was her fourth. That ensured protection for the babe as this religion demanded all firstborns be sacrificed to their gods.

In the spring of 1378 BC, Seth ben Abiram was born in the city of Tyre, Phoenicia (now called Lebanon). By this time the mother was well versed in the performance of the rite and induction of the newborn into this church of Satan. Meriham knew exactly what to do, as she had practiced the rite before he was born. This was Seth's introduction into a world of evil.

As Seth grew he was taught his religion. If he failed to properly perform any of the rituals, he was punished for that failure. (I will not discuss any of the rituals at this point.) Let's just say that he learned and practiced the dark arts, rituals, and chants starting at the age of six. At 7 ½ he learned about the sweet smelling smoking stick his stepfather sucked on. From that point on he was given a least one pack a week to smoke. He learned business from his stepfather and in private schooling. He learned more of the rituals in his church, participated in sports, gymnastics, or anything that helped strengthen his body and would make him stronger. At the age of 12 he looked like a tall 15 year old. He was learning to perfectly obey his god's laws, the only law he knew.

The dark abilities he was imbued with were slowly but surely helping him attain the first of his desires: Power and money.

One day in class he saw a beautiful girl that he wanted. She would not give him any attention, totally ignoring him. But he couldn't get her out of his mind and finally decided to ritually take her for his own, meaning he had to rape her. He accomplished his plans. By this time in his life he had also killed those that had crossed him, but only after he warned them. He was completely obedient to all the mandated laws, followed the spiritual teachings almost to the letter, and fulfilled all his school assignments.

After he had had his way with her, he learned one of the people he had killed was her brother. Nevertheless, he felt something strange for this girl that he had never experienced before—love. It was this strong emotion that she bore which he felt. This was the first time he had any idea that others would be indirectly and adversely affected by what he did. He later found out the girl had soon been sold into slavery by her family.

He went to his mother to find out what this strange thing was

he had felt in his heart. She listened to all he had done to the girl and how he felt. She told Seth that this was his first experience with actual love. He knew she was right for him. He determined he would find this girl, no matter how long it took. He had felt the great love in his heart, and now he would seek to make her his own forever.

The following days, weeks, and months began to flow into years as he searched, ever learning, ever gaining strength, ever gaining power. What teachers refused to teach him, for fear he would overpower them, he extracted directly from their minds. His mother had taught him the dark arts well. He was able to always take what he wanted but still acting as if he were disappointed.

He grew powerful in the dark arts, passing up his mother's knowledge. He kept his religious rites and observed all their ordinances perfectly. Their lives were all about power, money, sex, and possessions. To deny anyone intimacy was a punishment.

At sixteen years of age he desired to join an exceedingly secret society of their religion. To become a member he was told he had to ritually kill someone in the public society that was opposed to their religious order. It was a Christian who was preaching against them. Seth was to make sure that person was eliminated and the body completely desecrated. Others would be watching to ensure he followed through completely. He knew nothing of the so-called Christians except that they were a cult.

He followed through and did as directed which allowed him into the secret society of their church. It was here that he would learn the higher laws of his god, eventually allowing him to pierce the veil, opening portals to hell through which his god would come and imbue him with more power. During all of

this he still felt this love in his heart, and he continued to search for it.

Seth went off to a large university to continue his education. (Yes, they had universities in those days.) He earned three masters degrees and several Ph.D.s. He was considered a genius by his professors and tested out that way. He became a business man and was beyond successful. His enterprises included shipping, merchandising, and also biological genetic chemical engineering.

In the church he continued to rise in authority and priesthood. He learned all of the rites and ordinances required by a High Priest in the Church of Satan. His dark powers would rise to the point that wherever he went, people felt him coming. Due to the exceptional power his god imbued him with, Seth's eyes changed to the point he had to wear a band over his eyes (similar to sun glasses). Over the years he left quite a trail of blood and general mass control over many people. His powers included levitation, teleportation, manifestation, mind control, and so much more that the people began to consider him a god because only a god could do all that he was able to do.

He would sire many children and receive five holy bond mates who loved him. Although they were deeply loved, he didn't want to formally marry them until he found the "One" whose love he felt in his heart. To be a bonded spouse is a religious ritual and not a social formal marriage. There was no love for any who were not his "holy" bond mates or "holy" children. Non holy family members, of which there were many, were considered as trash (newborns included) to be used as desired.

I won't recount the many murders, rapes, beatings, broken bones, sacrifices, satanic sacrifice of innocence, pillaging, and many other things we'd consider abominable that Seth was part of. Suffice it to say he obeyed his god's commands to the letter. Well almost.

He had become the head of the Worldwide Church of Satan and was ordered to become fully translated by his god and to enter that god's kingdom. Instead he searched the world over to find this love that he felt in his heart. But still, he was unable to encounter her. For some 90 years he had systematically, studiously, searched the entire planet for his beloved "One." Untold graves and documentation were searched to no avail. Finally he knew, without a doubt, she was nowhere on or beneath the planet. Yet he could still feel her love near. Finally, in the year 1122 BC at 256 years of age, he gave up searching in mortality. He knew she had either died leaving no mortal body, or she had ascended.

His god had given him the title of the Most Holy World Grand Master Lord of the Worldwide Church of Satan. Seth went to their huge convention center and stood in front of the main altar in the huge worship hall. As the people saw him there, they came running because they knew when he showed up, a portal would open above the altar and their god would normally step through.

While standing at the altar Seth with his hands high over his head and in an intensely powerful voice that filled to the far reaches of the auditorium and beyond, Seth began the triple chant. His voice was so powerful the walls and foundations vibrated. People raced to see the resulting huge light orb that came at Seth's request.

The light orb floated above the altar, and a voice boomed forth asking what Seth desired. It was difficult to discern between the two powerful voices.

Usually his god physically knocked him over with an enhancement of power and priesthood, but this time Seth stayed standing, and in nearly as powerful a voice as the one emanating from the light orb, stated, "It is my desire to enter thy holy

realm and go before thee, blessed holy, God. There is nothing on the mortal plane to keep me any longer. I completed the full ascension some time ago, but had other business to finish. All pertaining to mortality is complete as had been commanded by thee.”

“Come! Enter and be welcome into my holy kingdom. Come to me and receive your rewards at the hand of your God!”

It was on that day, at high noon, that Seth moved up and stepped through the portal into the light and closed it behind him.

Seth was greeted by a group of men similar to himself. They were accompanied by a large contingency of minions. They shook his hand and slapped him on the back, cheering the man for achieving full ascension. It was rare anyone did. They led Seth down a long path and showed him many wonders of the new world. Two things were on his mind: where is his One and where his beloved bonded companions are. One of the men told Seth he had to report to their God first before he could seek out his companions.

The trip was long for they took him through many planes of existence full of people that had failed to meet the requirements or were those who had sought to worship other gods only to discover it was the wrong one. Seth laughed along with the others over the fate of many they passed. The ones with him were respectful, for Seth had a body of flesh and bone, but they only had a body of ethereal essence. His power far outstripped theirs. He insisted they take him to see his god as quickly as possible. Trembling, they began to run at a high speed (Seth could easily keep up) almost straight down through a totally dark area and out into a massive, beyond imagination, huge land that seemed devoid of any type of plant life. There were stark thorns and seeming dead shrubbery yet not a hint of green anywhere.

Seth arrived wondering what happened to the land where he was told his God lived. It was dull red and black with little else. There were areas of bright orange flames and explosions in various places. Otherwise, it was a brutally desolate place. There were masses of people and many types of living beings. The minions pointed to a long wide road he was to travel that would bring him to the throne of his God. The huge giant of a God was sitting on his throne attending to some barbarous punishments being inflicted on someone that had been brought down from one of the prison areas Seth had passed through.

Seth ran at high speed to arrive in a few minutes at the feet of the God who had visited him through the portal. He had to wait for a few minutes while the God inflicted severe pain of the mind and emotions upon a badly twisted person who apparently had rebelled earlier. The God looked up and saw Seth patiently waiting behind many others.

“Seth! You have arrived at last,” the huge God exclaimed. “Word was you came through some time ago. What took you so long to come report to me? Speak quickly lest I throw you into one of the prisons to await my pleasure upon you!”

Seth explained that the welcoming committee had kept him from coming until he had finally commanded them to bring him to his God.

Chuckling, Satan smiled, “The minions were doing their jobs. Well done to figure out what it was. Your great work has been observed from your birth. Very well indeed. You have earned a level of command few others gain.”

Puzzled, Seth looked at his God before expressing, “Command? I was lead to believe there was a kingdom. Have I failed in some way that prevents the acquisition or endowment of one?”

Laughing, Satan in ridicule stated, "Ah, Seth, you have much yet to learn. Did you not know it is impossible to learn ALL needed to be head of a kingdom in your short, puny, life as a mortal? In time that will come. For now either accept the position of Grand Master General of Legions or you can become a minion of one."

This was not quite what he had expected, but then again his God had far more knowledge and wisdom than he. He chose to become a Grand Master General of Legions. A small increase of power and knowledge was given with the new title. All the God did was touch Seth's forehead with a single finger. The power and knowledge were easily, instantly transferred. A lower minion was commanded to take Seth to his new quarters in the huge capital city called Pandemonium. The minion did as he was commanded.

Through the arch of Pandemonium City a screaming multitude was herded to be divided up as spoils to the Demon Lords of Hell. Each Lord is awarded a yearly tribute of souls depending upon his position and rank, and it is this that ignites the many wars which constantly plague hell. For he with the most souls under his ward gains the most power, and demon lords desire power above all else.

The City of Pandemonium is a twisting, ever changing labyrinth of strange, organic structures which constantly grow into each other. Here it is rather easy for the crafty soul to slip away, although it is not wise to abandon the protection of the demon overlords, regardless of how unbearable it may seem. Despite its vast size, the streets are vastly empty except for the occasional work crew or demonic emissary.

Away from the gates and the multitude, one is confronted by an eerie quiet, only occasionally broken by the skittering of vermin or the moans of the damned. A peek inside the many

dark, foreboding buildings reveals any number of unspeakable tortures. Here a soul is eternally burned by fire; there one is skewered by revolving, twisting barbs; somewhere else a soul is hung upside down by the feet, covered in thousands of biting insects. How terrible must be the sin of a soul to merit such special attention.

Many of the souls in hell bear the scars of innumerable beatings, proddings, or other creative abuses. Most of them suffer some form of abnormality, as it is rare to find a soul with all its limbs and features intact. The suffering of each is compounded by the realization that many of these may have been in hell for thousands of years.

The city was a few short miles from the main throne and command center of the God. Seth's new quarters were vastly smaller than what he was used to living in. He was told he will have to furnish it. All he was given, which was most gracious of their God, was a one room building. Everything would have to be paid for, made, stolen, or manifested. Concentrating for a few moments, Seth was able to manifest a simple seat. With a fraction more effort he was able to place a force field of darkness around the building which stabilized it preventing any merging with other structures.

He went to report to his new commander. He informed the commander that he wanted his five bond mates and that he desired his own kingdom. The head commander doubled over with laughter. Seth would have to earn the right to have any companion of any type. It will depend on how many legions Seth had and how well he could control and train them.

The longer Seth was in this new plane of existence, the less he liked it.

His legions of minions were completely raw, never having been given or received any type of military training, self-de-

fense, nor any honest knowledge of their God's ways at all. It was as if they were babies in adult bodies. Nevertheless, he did train them in his God's work. It also took many years for Seth to find and retrieve all five of his bond mates.

Seth would spend around three thousand years in hell. He hated the God he had worshiped while in mortality, but it was the only God he knew, and that was the blasted problem: he knew of no other God. Eventually, he heard of others, but they all turned out to either be created in the minds of the minions or were actually the one he had chosen to worship. If there was a way out, he had no idea where to go or how to accomplish it. He felt trapped and fully betrayed. The growing anger and hate were affecting his companions, but there was nothing he could do about it. His work load increased as his God made him the Illustrious Grand Master General of the Lower Armies of Satan.

Finally he was moved up to where he had command and control over the main elite armies of Satan.

After he had been in hell for nearly one thousand years, he could feel that shard of love stirring in his heart, the love of his "One." That renewed his effort to find her. Was she nearby? He let his heart search only to realize the love was far away. He had reached a level of command that allowed him to search the many areas of hell, which he did. It was his heart that was leading him to the many areas. Realization dawned: his God could not detect what was in his heart. Seth began to use that to his advantage. He learned how to think with his heart and keep his mind on the work and commands of the accursed God at the same time. The work load became so great he never was able to check on where that love was nor anything about it. After a little more than one hundred years the shard of love within his heart became quiet again.

There was a new load of minions being brought in. They

were speaking a name he had never heard of...“Yahweh.” The name sent a painful shock through him. Why? The word alone had power yet no one knew why. Anyone asking their God about that name ended up horribly punished. Seth had more than enough intelligence to learn by others’ mistakes. More were brought in who were severely punished the instant they thought that name. They learned to rapidly forget it. But Seth did not. He put it into his heart and kept it hidden.

It had been 1044 years since he had ascended and entered into what used to be the holy realm but had become hell even for him. With no warning of any type, there was a heavy tremor that went through the complete realm of Satan. For a moment the very foundations shook then stopped. How strange! There was a lot of panic from which he had to bring his legion leaders and a goodly portion of the legions back under control. Suddenly, another tremor shot through. It was heavier than the first. Seth simply levitated. His minions did not know how and panicked again. Once again he brought them under control. What was happening?! Is their God shaking everything to test all the leaders? Seth teleported to the City of Pandemonium to see if their God had anything to do with the quakes. Just as he appeared over his own quarters, another quake ripped through. Seth looked to their God and saw fear! How can that be? Suddenly all hell began to shake and buck violently for about three hours. During the course of the quake, he had his bonded mates hold onto him, and he levitated them high enough to keep them safe. He enveloped them all within a shield protecting them from falling objects from above. Because of his love, they trusted him, and in turn, strengthened him with their own love for him, and thus they were reasonably calm throughout the event.

It took a full 24 hours to bring all in his command back into complete control. Most of the buildings in hell had been destroyed. He manifested a new home for his bonded women.

While doing the work of getting things under control, Satan suddenly roared so loud many had to plug their ears. Seth was commanded to race up to the upper regions to assist with a severe control issue. There was no reason given for this sudden need to take those from the deep regions and send them to less demanding control sections. When Seth arrived, he saw an extremely bright light that nearly blinded him. Slipping his eye band on for protection, he was able to see there were beings of bright light entering the first regions of the holy realms. Where did they come from??? All the leaders were backing up. They could not stand the brilliant light radiating from these beings. Due to his body of flesh and bones, Seth had the power and strength to withstand some of it, but as he moved toward the light beings, he had to stop because he was in pain. Despite the pain he was able to stop some of the prisoners from escaping. Unfortunately, there were a lot who followed the light beings out.

There was one who seemed to be the leader of all the light beings, and he was so bright that Seth had to fight panic because the pain was excruciating. He was just able to see the form of a human figure, but nothing else for the light was painfully bright, even for his covered eyes. Who was that? Where did he or she come from? There were many questions that would remain unanswered. He worked hard to overcome that light, but found it impossible. Falling back along with the rest of the leaders, they tried to send lower minions to bring the escaping ones back. The minions were too terrified to move. No amount of whipping or beating could get them to obey.

One of the bright beings called out to all that there was another God who was of light and great love. The extremely brilliant one was the Son of God who was seeking to bring any and all who so chose, out of the realms of Satan, and that there was choice and a love beyond what they could imagine in another

realm. Seth did not even dare think of such a thing. The light was viciously painful. If that was a God of love then why did it hurt so much to be anywhere near the main being? The voice that was calling stated all were to “repent” (to leave off from the evil they had engaged in). Seth shook his head. He had worked very hard in the way of righteousness. He was where he belonged ... yet ... something in his heart said he was not. He was confused. Then the work became almost overwhelming, and he turned his whole mind to it.

Seth was punished severely by his God for the many that had escaped in spite of the fact it was not his fault. All of his legions were still there, and he had saved two others besides. That didn't matter, his God doubled the work load. His hatred of his God was growing slowly, but surely. Somehow he had to get out of there, but how when the light was so mindlessly painful? As he worked for days on end without a break, there were bits and pieces of information about the beings of light and more especially the one who was called Yahweh, the son of the God of light and love. There were tiny fragments of information that said the God of love heard the prayers of those seeking to escape the places of darkness. Seth laughed for he was of pure darkness himself. Just one look at his eyes and skin told everyone that. Yet his heart would not give up. There was something in the back of his subconscious that was highly curious about gaining any and all information about that light being and the other “God.”

Little by little he learned things that intrigued him. The problem was every time he thought of that being of light, he was punished by his God. He learned to think, habitually, much better in his heart where his God could not hear nor discern anything. Why wouldn't his heart give up? Love. The love of his One! Her love was similar to ... wait ... that Son of God had a nearly identical love that he had been searching for! It hit him

with unbelievable force. His One carried the love of that painfully brilliant Son of God after all. There was no way out or was there? In near despair he felt trapped. For now he had to work hard to stay in any good graces with the present God. In spite of the work and pain, Seth was slowly, surely rising in power and knowledge of his God. He had become one of his God's greatest weapons and trainers. His God bribed him with a bigger home and furnishings.

It took a long time for Seth to learn to pray from his heart, but learn he did. After searching ALL of the place that he now called "hell," his One was nowhere in it. Yet he could still feel her at a distance. Every time he was in the upper regions, he shot a tiny prayer toward what he hoped would be the right direction.

The years slipped by into hundreds then to another thousand. Still, he strove to send a periodic call for help. Unfortunately, it was rare the opportunity rose. He became a King of Legions and Prince of devils. With each new position he gained more power and knowledge. Finally his God adopted him as a son. Seth should have been ecstatic, but was humbled and a little afraid. He knew their God was withholding anything from even his own sons that may give them power to become gods in their own rights with dominions and principalities of their own. He knew he had advanced as far as would be allowed.

Seth still sent his prayers from his heart up. He had learned to send them in a Nano second. It was more than two thousand years since he had ascended. Seth still felt the distant love of his One and wanted badly to get out of his God's kingdom to find her. Though he was deeply addicted to the power he wielded in hell, he had to escape somehow, someway. He was able to formulate a new prayer to that God of Light and Love and learned to send it off in a tiny flash that no one could detect. But still no answer.

He very slowly, almost imperceptibly, began to sink into the depths of despair. Another 650 years had passed by and still he could not find his One. Then something changed. He could feel her above, she was on the surface of the earth; she was a new born infant. Seth determined to do all he could to bring her to him. Over the years he devised many plans to bring her down to hell, all of which were thwarted by the God of Light. He decided he would slowly break her will to live and then bring her down to hell as she transitioned. It meant her faith had to be slowly, insidiously broken.

A few short years after she was born, there was an overwhelming desire to take her as his own. More than once he had been able to visit her, as she slept in the dead of a moonless night, and was able to copulate with her. He was able to cause a dream whereby she happily, lovingly, reacted fully responding to his ministrations. Her love always gave him a little more strength and power. He reveled in the feel of her body. But she did not know it was him nor who he was. He had to bring her down! His heart cried to have her as his own!

Several years passed and she became an adult with a family of her own. The love she had for her children was great. Although she had married two other men, her heart kept searching for someone it could not find. Seth knew her heart was searching for him. Both hearts were crying, pleading, begging, for each other! That realization gave him greater determination to bring her into his arms.

Seth arranged circumstances causing her to become extremely tired. He was able to send a highly trained demon into her that would not give up until the victim had died. She felt it enter, but could do nothing about it as she was so weak. Over the years, she slowly weakened to the point the demon could now do its evil deed and take her down. It had taken ten years

to get her there. Still, she fought it for another eight years. It was indeed slow yet effective.

Suddenly, from nowhere he could detect, there was a deep, distinct feeling he was to stop what he was doing to bring her down into the realm of evil where he was, for he could not have her that way. He thought about it and even honestly considered it, but he had searched for too long, had worked too hard to obtain her and truly felt it was too much to stop. Pushing aside the warning, he continued to work to bring her down to him. His heart and mind were firmly locked into at last bringing her into his arms to ease his heart with the love she bore.

Her new husband was completely in Seth's control. He was deeply selfish and despised, resented and abused her. She tried to escape him only to be sent back to that man three times, by her own God! In glee, Seth felt her God was actually helping him.

Finally she became so sick, she was dying. Four days after being hospitalized, she managed to gain enough strength to drag herself to the inpatient hospital bathroom where she could be alone. There was not enough strength to sit up so she laid over her legs. Her life was ebbing away, and Seth could feel her coming down into his hands. Her body was actually touching his hands. He could not take her for there was just a little too much mortal life in her yet. She was still feebly fighting. Trembling with expectation his mind was centered on bringing her down to grasp and hold her within his arms. He will never forget that which sent him into the greatest rage and heart-rending pain he had ever experienced.

Completely surrounded by a mass of his strongest minions, keeping him protected from the light, with his hands literally holding her over his head, slowly bringing her down the last few inches into his waiting arms, softly she spoke, "Oh, God,

the Eternal Father. If I am to die, then so be it. If I am to live, then so be it. I give up. Thy will be done, Father. Thy will be done.”

She stopped struggling and let go. But it was not to drop the rest of the way into his hands and arms. A shaft of light shot down. She was suddenly snatched out of his hands and placed firmly back into mortal life. Two large angels were standing guard beside her. Her life force was renewed. Her heart and mind stabilized.

His angry roar of pain and rage was heard in all of hell! He could not believe she would have enough strength to call out, at the last moment, to her God for help and be answered! Hate was welling up and blinding him! All the years of long hard work were completely wasted! He had nothing to show for it. There was a loud voice in his mind, stating he could still have her but NOT where he was. That stopped the overwhelming hate and anger. In puzzlement he thought and asked if she could still be his, after all? There was a distinct and surprisingly strong affirmative but again, not where he was. He could not have her in hell. In the meantime, she was placed in sanctuary for two years.

Seth now had to face his God and explain the failure to bring her to his kingdom. He was tortured with brutal punishment.

For two more years he periodically sent the prayer from his heart. There was the feeling it was being answered, yet he began to despair again. He found out that she was moving to the country. She was still battling ill health. He no longer wanted to bring her down to hell, instead he wanted to come up to her. This was, after all, the love that had kept him going for more than three thousand years in hell. But how could he get up to her? He is a son of Satan and had sworn to do all of his God’s bidding. There were others still departing from what he

now knew to be hell, yet he could not move out himself. He tried many times to find out how it was done, but the way was blocked for him. Besides, every time someone began to tell him what they knew of the way out, either his own system would be shocked badly by the name used or he would automatically stop the speaker by beating them for even thinking of escaping. His own mind, in some real ways, was against him. It was as if his own heart was failing. The anger was no longer sustaining him.

To his horror, his One now prayed the great love she had carried be taken, for it had become too painful to bear. A good portion was taken, plus she consciously dampened the rest. Her heart had not found the other it sought, and she had given up ever finding him. He felt a sadness that was threatening to overwhelm him. Again, he sent the heart felt plea, but his hope was low. It was painful to realize the feeling of his own shard of love contained in his heart was beginning to fail. She also felt an overwhelming sadness and a lack of hope. He had put that into her. He cried, for her heart was praying round the clock to die. Still, there was that sense of answer. He had to be patient for just a little longer.

On May 30, 2006 AD, someone came into the upper reaches of the realms and said there were members of the Aberdeen family who were being released because a mortal member was doing specialized ordinance work which unlocked the way for them to leave. Seth was instantly fully alert for that was one of his blood lines from a long time ago. It was remote, but he was a part of that family blood line. He couldn't stop the few that did leave, so he wanted to see where they went. He would gladly take the punishment later if it meant he could at last find the means and the way out. He sent some minions up to follow. They reported it was at a place high in the mountains by the name of Mt. Aetna, in the western hemisphere of the country of

the United States of America. The minions showed him where it actually was. Surrounded by his strongest minions, imps, and evil earthbounds, Seth went as close to the building as able. It was strongly shielded, so he could not enter. However he could see inside the home. "SHE is there!!! His One is inside!!!" She was a part of the ritual that was taking place. And she could see! She could see him, but was refusing to acknowledge him. As the ritual progressed, she was truly part of it, for she could see Yahweh and was conversing with Him. He was guiding her in what needed to be done. In tears he could see there really was a way out. Yet, was he blocked because he was a son of Satan? They were saying that any and all can come forth through that name that hurts so badly. He noticed others who had escaped from his control, and they were fine. They were better than fine. They were happy! He envied them.

Walking back to his home in Pandemonium, he pondered what he saw and heard within his heart. He must get out, and even though it is going to be a ruthlessly painful undertaking, he has got to go. Within his home, while sitting in one of the large chairs, surrounded by his beloved bond mates and in tears, with every last fiber of his being, every last modicum of strength he had, with every ounce of his heart, he sent one last plea for help to get out, and felt it shoot, not only in the usual Nano second, but here was something different. His heart was literally crying. He really wanted out no matter what it took! Suddenly there was something happening outside, and he was instantly above his house looking around. There was a strange sound coming from above. He looked up. All the forces of hell were backing away from the very brilliant point of light slowly descending. For the first time in his long life, he stood shaking, at a complete loss of what to do.

As Seth stared up, a shaft of light came directly down upon him. It did cause very mild pain, but that was all. He noticed

that the brilliant light was contained around the being. The light was projecting a shaft of light part-way to where Seth was standing. The being stopped about a mile away from Seth.

In a powerful, yet profoundly loving, kind voice, the exceedingly brilliant being who had briefly entered that realm approximately 2000 years ago, asked, "I have come in answer to your prayer. What is it you seek? Your prayer carried the extraordinary power of an extreme heart felt and deeply spiritual desire."

Trembling and fearing this one was going to punish him like his own God had in the past, Seth humbly said, "I desire to leave this place for I know I have chosen the wrong God to worship. Is that possible even for a son of Satan? I knew not of another true God until it was too late. Is it too late even for me? Know thou I also deeply desire to obtain someone my heart, in the depth of love, has sought for, for thousands of years. For that I am willing to do all thou ask. I also desire to know of the God of Love which love the one I seek carries. In all humility, I plead from the absolute core of my heart, how do I escape from here?"

The Lord and Savior, Yahweh, kindly answered, "It will be painful for you; nevertheless, it is possible even for you, a son of great evil, to escape this place. Follow the path of light I have laid before you. I can only show you the way out. You must come on your own power. Are you willing to walk the path of light and follow me? If so, know it will be a long, slow, and painful journey, but with patience and perseverance you will escape to find your heart's desire."

Seth, with eyes steadfastly on the Savior ... his Savior ... began the long walk up and out. What had been impossible before was now a reality coming to pass, giving him actual hope, which he clung to. He walked the path of light laid before him. The

Savior walked backwards keeping the same distance between to prevent proximity pain to Seth. The pain gradually increased as he moved up into the levels containing light (very low light) without any protection of his minions. All hell moved to stop him, throwing many objects at him, cursing him, scratching him, sending bolts of searing light and deadly balls of energy upon him, but the brilliant light gave him some protection. The other sons of Satan sent bolts of lightning to knock him off that path of light. A few bolts hit, burning his body and one small spot on his face. Nothing stopped him. After a while he had to rest because of fatigue.

The Savior told him of a set of devices that if he chose to put on would help protect him from the light, as he was not used to it. He put them on and found they were of great help. He would eventually be taken to the plane of repentance, the place between hell and paradise in the spirit world. He would drop to his knees and start his repentance process. Eventually he was able to come to the surface of earth where he now, as a translated being of light, helps in the service of others.

It was only because of his “fail safe”, his One, that he had the desire to come out of hell and change. He had sought that shard of love he had felt in his heart nearly his entire life. While she, as his bonded and fail safe, also sought the one that she loved by sending all her love to him. His Savior and the Atonement allowed even a son of Satan the opportunity to repent and become of light. He had followed the law he had been given in righteousness, as evil as it was. This was the law he was judged by. But he still has to pay the price of repentance for the evil he has done. Now as Seth continues along his path of light to become like his Brother, our Lord Jesus Christ, one day in the long distant future he will be able to say at the time of his journey on the Christ path that he too, has “descended below all things.” He will be able to succor his brothers and sisters on a planet

where the Gods of Light have placed children that will have need of an Atonement and Savior. He will be of the order of the Christs, just as his Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, is, and as his Christ's Father is. Because the Lord Jesus Christ did as He saw His Father do. Seth chose to do likewise and descended below all things. He now has knowledge that otherwise is impossible to gain or understand because true knowledge requires experience.

Chapter 15

POSSESSED IN & OUT & CURSED BESIDES

Another time I received an email from a young woman who asked if I could help or find someone to help her. She said that for a long time she had felt an evil presence in her, and she wanted it out. She had built a wall to fend it off, but it had control over her since she was a little girl. Even as a little girl it would tell her to kill herself. When she was a mother and nursing or holding her baby it told her to slit the baby's throat. She felt contempt for her children, husband and others, especially herself. People were not allowed to hug her, even her children because she couldn't stand it.

"After my husband gave me the blessing on the mountain that commanded the thing to uproot itself or whatever... the Lord didn't come and cast it out. ...I certainly didn't feel healed. I still felt damaged. I felt for days, like I was in a box or something—because everything in me was being closed off. ...I felt "better" in that I didn't hear the thing telling me to murder my children or all the other horrible things it liked to flood me with—but I didn't feel the light of the Lord and so I didn't feel or believe I was healed or OK. It was a creepy feeling. I don't remember ever being boxed in this much. I figured the thing was hiding, because the fruits seemed to indicate it, but I couldn't see it or much of anything around me."

I read her email and prayed about it. I responded that I saw that the entity was indeed very experienced, also very nasty and that she might want to get rid of it. She replied asking me to come out and help. I told her yes. We set the date for the next Sunday.

“Anyway, so I told mom all about what I was feeling, mostly because I couldn’t see what was happening. She agreed that it sounded like things were trying to hide so I couldn’t see them, would think they were gone, and wouldn’t do anything about it. Somewhere in there we mentioned Doug Mendenhall coming over (and perhaps ‘they’ didn’t want him to), and then something wriggled around and was upset. There it was. It didn’t try to hide too much after we confirmed and I said, ‘Doug IS coming’ and that basically the hiding hadn’t worked.”

Fortunately I was in the middle of a long fast, and I knew that I had to be fasting for at least three days before I could help so I was ready. Sunday afternoon I arrived at her house.

“As it got closer to Doug coming the ‘thing’ got more agitated.”

She and her husband and children lived with her parents. It was the parent’s home shared by her and her family. At first we spent some time talking about her difficulties which had been with her since she was a small child. She remembered being told to kill herself many times, and told to kill her children as she nursed them. Now, she didn’t want to be hugged or have her children or her husband near her, and she was not very nice to him.

“I was concerned about being home with the 4 children on Sunday while everyone was at church. I was not able to keep the thing from never rearing up. The Lord would

help me. It was the only way through it. I would feel angry and the thing inside would rise up telling me something horrible to do to the kids. The Lord would stand beside me with an often large shining ball of love and tell me something else to do. If I could manage to choose the Lord's offer and receive the light, then it would come in and push the negative thing back down into its hole... This also reminds me that I felt strongly that if I put a shield of love around the kids it would keep them safe. So every night before I went to bed I would go to each child as they were sleeping and apologize for all the negative crap I sent at them today. I would try as best I could to untangle the negative stuff from them and me and let it go. I would send love to them to try and heal or counteract any negative thing I had sent at them. I would make a love ball or cocoon or shield around them with love (from the Lord, coming through me), to keep them safe. Every night. As I look back now I'm sure that it helped keep them safe not only from outside stuff, like I assumed, but from the horror in me that wanted to destroy them."

As I sat and listened I knew that I needed the permission of her father since it was his home and stewardship. After a while I asked her what she wanted me to do. She then said that she wanted a blessing and suggested we all go into the bedroom so if this thing really was cast out it would not jump into the children.

"I found myself not looking at Doug much and it's kind of like the 'thing' hoped that somehow people would just visit and things would stay the same – friendly meeting and no change. I sat there. Eventually mom had me talk about this or that relating to what was going on. So hard to keep thoughts in my head. It was trying hard to keep me

from communicating about the situation – especially with Doug. The thing didn't want to look at Doug.

“Doug asked what I wanted from him or how we should proceed. I had prayed about what to do but I just couldn't see it. The 'thing' was blocking it...All I decided was that Dad could give me a blessing.

“The entity was getting more and more upset and I was having a super hard time continuing to move and function and think. We went into Mom and Dad's room because I thought it best in case things got hairy or I wasn't moving. I didn't want the kids to burst in.”

When the five of us got into the bedroom, I asked what I could do to help. She again stated that she wanted a blessing. When her father asked who she wanted to do it, she said she didn't care. He declared that he would do it, and mentioned that he didn't know if he had priesthood, or if it even mattered and that he would do it in the name of Christ. Apparently, she had received several blessings and none of them had done any good. I started to wonder why none of the blessings had been effective.

“Mom said a prayer in preparation and prayed for shields to protect the kids in the other room. I moved to the end of the bed. I think my husband was behind me. That didn't bother the entities much. As dad came up to my left, the entities were uncomfortable when he was within a foot and a half or so. I was wriggling. Doug was across the room to my right. Sometimes I think he looked (to the entities) apprehensive or like he wasn't going to do anything, and the entities were glad and hoped he was going to stay away and not do anything.”

Her father then said, “Let's put our hands on her and I will say it.” He repeated that fact that he didn't know if priesthood

was necessary and that maybe just faith in Christ would do it.

Her husband and father laid their hands on her head. When I took one step towards her, she reared back, like an animal backed into a corner that did not want anyone to come closer.

“Doug came within about 3 feet of me and I was uncomfortable and writhed and things tried to get away. Doug stopped and stepped back, and here’s where I started not being totally aware of everything that was going on in the room because what I heard is more along the lines of, ‘NOOO! Get away!!!’ and sounds of something very upset, screaming and writhing in some sort of agony and horror. I don’t remember who said what now. I was dealing with other stuff, or rather, I was doing what I felt my job was—which was to give permission for the things to go, and open up so they could. I was just kind of like a bystander in my body – in the background I felt like. To say anything I had to like...come forward and take the mike, otherwise it was the other entities that were being vocal as they were being dragged out. I was just trying to get out of the way! It was like I was standing to the back of my body so the things could leave up and out in front of me – as opposed to me being in the top section of my body like normal. I moved out of the way.”

I backed up and apologized for invading her space, not wanting to aggravate her or it in any way at that point.

Then she said in a different voice, “I don’t care if he, (pointing to her husband) or he, (pointing to her father) puts their hands on me, but I don’t want him to put his hands on me (pointing to me).”

Her husband and father pulled their hands off of her head. The father turned to me and said, “Maybe you should give her the blessing.”

That was what I had been waiting for, permission to do something. It seemed like the Lord had similar plans because He immediately told me, **“Go!”**

As I stepped towards her, she instantly sprang backwards away from me. Her husband, who was sitting next to her grabbed her, wrapping his arms around her. I don't know if her father helped or not. I kind of lay across her as she tried to get away, not wanting to get kicked and finally got my hands on her head. I immediately cast the nasty critter out of her and any other demon, devil, earthbound, minion that might have been in there out and sent them south into swine, commanding them that they are not to ever enter her again.

“So Doug spoke a blessing and the thing inside was ripping and writhing. My body was all tight and writhing and stuff, like is common for this entity to want to do – except more all-encompassing than normal. I think at some point Doug told me ‘...relax,’ and I tried to come forward inside and take control again and relax my body. I do remember his saying something about casting the thing south, to swine...and never to return to me again.”

In the middle of the blessing she seemed to have fainted. Her husband carefully pulled her to the top of the bed so she could rest. I talked to her for a while and then went into the living room because her mother had requested a blessing. Shortly after talking for a moment the young woman came out and sat for a while. We decided to go back to the bedroom for her mother's blessing.

“When that blessing was over I felt really weak and couldn't move. I did feel the big thing go out of me but I didn't feel totally better...When I tried to force things open I could see the light of the Savior and see Him better but it

was super painful and I couldn't figure out how to just let it in. Something was in the way.

"The other adults left the room and I was alone. I was praying and praying about how I felt. I asked Him to come heal me and get rid of the blocks and many other things. I tried and tried to see how to get around whatever was causing the problem and not letting the light of the Lord in. Why wasn't it working? I did feel better inside. The entity said something to me that communicated that things had been cast out of the inside but not the outside. I looked outside and could see the negative thing on my lower face area and chest area. I thought about what to do. Thoughts came about doing nothing and just working through it later after Doug left. Thoughts about how it was okay that this was left and there wasn't anything that needed to be done about it. I was distraught at the thought of not having all of it taken care of and now having to continue on dealing with it. I gathered up as much strength as I could and went out to the others...I remember that it was super hard to look at Doug. Something hated him still. Mom asked for her blessing and we moved back into the bedroom."

When we entered the bedroom she rested against the headboard with her husband next to her. She looked at me and in a deep voice said, "You got the ones inside, but you didn't get me, I'm on the outside."

I marveled that a demon could be that stupid and declare such a thing. So I said, "We can take care of that right now." (I would marvel even more later when she gave me these journal pages and she remembered it differently than I do. It makes me wonder how much was voiced and how much communication was in the spirit and we couldn't tell the difference.)

"I lay there and something kept hating Doug. I didn't want to be a bother but I felt I should say something, so I did (the evil thing said 'don't be a bother'). I tried to tell dad that I still had something on me but he didn't hear me. Finally I told Doug across the room, 'I have something on me that still hates you.' Doug asked where it was. 'It's from here to here (showing where it was).' Doug said, 'Just a minute,' and left the room. I wondered where he was going. To pray in the living room? But then I had the thought and picture that he was going to his car to get his sword. 'Oh good' I thought. I wondered why the thing on me wasn't upset – hadn't he heard that? I don't think the thing on me heard what was going on because it didn't freak out till after Doug came in, showed his knife, and said something like, 'You know what this is!'

"The entity recognized the sword it seems, because it started shrieking 'GET AWAY FROM ME!!' I lunged to the left to get away but my husband was there. I was (not really me) kicking my husband and trying to continue to writhe away, while screaming, 'GET AWAY FROM ME!!' Mostly that was screamed at Doug. A little bit to my husband because he was in the way of the entity getting away from Doug. My husband reports that I pushed him away and yelled at him. Doug walked toward me, so my husband grabbed onto me and was able to hold me enough that Doug could get to me. Doug came and laid both hands on me commanding the thing to leave and my husband says eventually he had his hand up commanding it. My head was buried in the bed for most of it so I didn't see a lot of what happened. I was screaming and fighting, and the thing was fighting to stay, but eventually was gone."

After hearing her say that I had only removed what had been

on the inside, I heard the Spirit tell me to go out to the car and get my knife that spiritually is a sword. I knew the entity would not like it, so I was eager to see what might happen. In the room I held up the knife and asked if it knew what it was? I wanted to use it to scrape it off of her but realized that when I got close, she might started jumping and writhing about again. So I put it away and immediately walked towards her. She started to scream and fight to crawl away. Her husband grabbed her again and held on. I put my hands on her head but then felt that I should raise my right arm to the square and cast the demon off. She became limp again, but was coherent. I left for home.

“I lay there. I felt like the thing was off me – but I didn’t feel totally great. I still felt like I didn’t like my husband and was feeling like I’d rather him not be there. I looked inside and felt a little bit of crummy gray negative energy that seemed to be coming from or around a black, thin, long, spine or spike thing in my heart/chest. I tried to get it off/away/out...I prayed and prayed about it. Eventually I got to a place where I could ask the Lord to send angels or something to come get it out. I felt like that was helping and that perhaps it was gone, but I still didn’t feel it was all resolved and asked Dad to give me a blessing.

“Dad spoke a blessing that none of us can really recall... something about all negative energies, entities, devices, and things being cleaned out of me.”

After traveling about six or seven miles down the road the Spirit told me to go back, that I wasn’t done yet. That really frustrated me. I racked my brain to figure out what I had done wrong and couldn’t for the life of me figure out why I “wasn’t done yet.” This so perplexed me that it really impeded my ability to hear the voice of the Lord. So much so that the Spirit told me to call a sighted friend to get some needed help. I called

and told her what had happened. She informed me that I had not cast off the curses, spells, hexes, devices, etc. How could I have been so forgetful?! Casting off those things is something the Spirit will usually always have me do in a blessing, especially with someone that was possessed by such strong powerful entities.

Then she told me that the woman had a generational curse that went back five generations on her mother's side. There were three dark intelligences that were operating the curse, moving it around on her body. She said they were in hiding and if I didn't get rid of them the curse would allow other entities to come into her. The curse was like a patch or a portal that allowed things of a dark nature to come in. If it was not taken care of and removed all of the darkness could come back inside of her and on her.

"I lay there and didn't feel like the negative stuff and black spine were there, but I felt very concerned and anxious that everything was going to come back. I had worried spots in me that I felt were attracting everything back. I prayed and prayed again. I asked that He change my thoughts or the patterns in me that seemed like they would attract stuff back. I was also trying not to be worried because fear might attract stuff back. I tried to let go of anything I could and resolve it or figure out what to say to the Lord to have Him fix it. It wasn't being fixed. I prayed and prayed for help. All I could do was lay there and try to resolve this problem because I couldn't just get up and go on with my life and ignore it and have everything come back! It had to be fixed now!"

So I traveled back to their house. I told her father that I had forgotten to cast off the curses, hexes and such. He said that they had found a device on her chest and had cast it off. So once

again I went into her and cast off the curses, hexes, implants, devices, shunts, etc., specific to the curses and the three negative intelligences that were attached to it. As I was leaving she came out of her bedroom and gave me a hug and a huge thank you.

“Eventually someone was at the door and Doug appeared in the room. He said that I still had stuff in me and that he was sorry he didn’t finish. He said he had left but was feeling like it wasn’t done. He had found out there was a curse in me that went back five generations on Mom’s side, that all of the stuff would come back if they weren’t taken care of. So, Doug spoke another blessing, which I don’t remember that got those out. I just slumped down during the blessing, weak like the others.

“But this time I felt a light come into my head and my countenance change. The worry that things were going to come back was gone. I didn’t feel like they were attached anymore. Before I had felt like there were cords or tubes... that were tan and speckled/mottled...that connected to the stuff that had been cast out way off in the distance. Now I felt a ton better. Now I felt relieved! And though I had lost strength, I was able to leap up and catch Doug to give him a hug before he left.”

She emailed me two days later about the event.

“Let me just say, on my first day of being able to choose to be ‘me’ again, that it’s so nice to be able to love my kids. To see them playing and not hate them. It’s nice to see their lego house on the counter and love what they have created instead of feeling like I want to ‘beat the crap out of them’ because they left it there. It’s new and nice to be able to touch my son without feeling like I have to smash through

a concrete wall to even reach my hand out. It's nice to be able to play with them and joke with them instead of fight thoughts about how to get them away from me and force them to do this or that. It's nice to have them hug me and me not cringe and try to hide that it's causing me horrible pain to have them touch me. It's nice to be able to say, 'I love you,' to my husband, or apologize to someone for something. It's nice to be able to 'reprimand' my children calmly without any hint of anger or having to keep back awful impulses. Thank you to the Lord!! (I don't hate the dog anymore either.)

"Today when I woke up, I laid there for a long time while smiling and smiling and laughing – which I haven't done in a super long time. Maybe years and years. I felt so much better and joy inside – much more light! I felt so happy inside that my face doesn't even have the capacity to express it...and I'm pretty sure it looks really weird."

Further Knowledge:

"There are people who are uneducated/unaware maybe even dumb enough to take on evil spirits for their own benefit and to enable them to gain greater power over others and which will perpetuate the evil designs onto their own posterity.

"There are others who were already possessed of evil who placed a specific 'family' curse upon another causing difficulties for these families for several generations.

"Naturally, evil never does anything alone and brings a few friends along for comfort as well as various implements to assist in wreaking havoc upon their assigned victims/charges. Of course some people do

succumb to the evil influences, but a few do not. An even smaller number recognize what the situation actually is and fight against it. These are the ones who seek the greatest assistance from others who may possibly have the God-given power and authority to remove the evil forces within. The greatest problem is, those who are sought after for help must also have the gift of revelation. Without it much is left behind and the victims, eventually, end up in a worse state than they had in the beginning.

“Most generally, because of the prayers of close relatives and/or friends from both sides of the veil, there will be one who has either volunteered or was ‘voluntold’ to take the culmination of the entire family’s generational curse and bring it to an end. These people are unusually strong, spiritually. They are endowed with extra spiritual strengths to withstand and stay in the mortal state to fulfill the mission. They generally recognize what is causing the problem, or problems, at a relatively young age but not always. Most often they feel a definite pressure to seek for someone who has the priesthood power and authority to both remove the evil entities and the accompanying curses in whatever forms that may be.

“The woman in this experience is one of those who had volunteered to enter the afflicted family and bring the terrible generational curse to an end. With time curses get stronger, especially ones that have come down through the generations. That is why proper priesthood authority and power is needed to get rid of it. On this kind, faith alone does not work.”

I really like this family, they are wonderful friends and people.

Their kindness is infectious, but it has gotten them into trouble at times. You see, the mother and daughter are both empathic and just can't seem to have others suffer. So they will take others pains and suffering onto themselves. This pretty much keeps them sick and suffering themselves. We have discussed this on several occasions. I doubt they will change. Like most empaths, they just love people and are willing to take whatever so others can feel better.

While doing a workshop many months later this event happened with the daughter:

While doing a Friday night, Saturday day workshop she showed up on Saturday morning. I was up front getting ready, and she walked in but didn't look very well. Instantly the thought came to me that she was possessed again, and I wondered how bad the possession was.

At the lunch break her father brought up her notebook and showed me a sentence in it that Amanda had penned. It was asking him to ask me if I could help her during the lunch break. After taking care of the people around me I went and sat down beside her. As I did so she kind of pulled herself away from me. She wouldn't look at me and said in the Hollywood "devil" voice, "I don't like you. I hate you." Then the real Amanda showed up and said that she really did like me. I asked if she wanted to go elsewhere in the house to see if she could be helped. She shook her head yes.

Immediately I got up and walked out of the room expecting her to follow. She was unable; she needed help to even walk. Her father and I helped her to the top of the stairs so we could go down to the room where I had stayed the previous night. At the top of the stairs she shied away and told me that it wanted to kill her and would throw her down if she tried to descend them. Our host came up to me to and offered the use of the

master bedroom. So we went there.

Once there she started to express her hatred for me again. "I hate you. I don't like you," it would say over and over again. She put her hands in her pocket and said she was afraid of hurting or hitting me since the thing hated me so much. Then she backed into a corner and kind of scrunched down. I knelt in front of her and pushed my chest against her legs so she was now pinned in the corner and could not move. I laid my hands on her head and started to cast out what was in her.

"I won't leave. I will kill her," the entity growled at me.

I said, "I will cast you out first, you have no right to her body."

"Then I will hide from you, you can't cast me out," was its reply.

"You can hide from me but you can't hide from our Lord Jesus Christ," I said back to it.

I then cast off and knew that several were sent away but the main "nasty" one was still there. This somewhat confused me, as I used my priesthood and the Lord's name to do so. It was then whispered to me that I needed to cut the bond that had been formed or secured with my sword/knife. I pulled it out and the demon went nuts. It didn't like the sword it was seeing.

"In the name of Jesus Christ I cut the bonds between you and Amanda," I said with a firm voice while doing a cutting motion with the sword where I could feel where the bonds were; there were three of them that were cut. She then relaxed. I then cast the critter off and she really relaxed and I knew it was gone.

Two days later she emailed and said she needed to talk about some things the Lord had showed her and He wanted me to know about. I had been asked to voice a blessing to a friend of hers that had attended the seminar so Dianne and I went out to

her house. While there I voiced two blessings and then spent some 90 minutes while she shared what is below.

A little over eight years ago she had a very close friend share with her what she had gone through with Satanic ritual abuse. My friend had never heard of such horrible things before. The Lord showed it to her as a great gray wall and asked if she would be willing to take it. She knew it could take her life, but for her friend she said yes because as I stated before she is empathic and will take everyone's stuff. But what was interesting is that she did not want the Lord to have to take it and suffer. She thought what He had showed her would happen suddenly, very soon, but it has not happened in the past eight years.

While relating this experience it occurred to me that she had several things to be concerned about. One was the idea of not giving it to our Lord Jesus Christ, as she did not want to hurt Him. This would be a concept inspired by the adversary, as he fully knows the ONLY one that can take it is our Lord. If we are blessed to be able to help a fellow sojourner here and take their darkness, the only way for us to get rid of it completely is to give it to the Lord Jesus Christ, who can then transmute it into a different form of energy and make it harmless.

For her to declare she would not allow the Lord to suffer would be from Satan. Our Lord suffered through the atonement so that he could succor us and take these things from us. I started this book using these two scriptures but they seem to also apply in this context:

*"He that ascended up on high, as also he descended below all things, in that he comprehended all things, that he might be in and through all things, the light of truth."
(D&C 88:6)*

"And he shall go forth, suffering pains and afflictions and

temptations of every kind; and this that the word might be fulfilled which saith he will take upon him the pains and the sicknesses of his people. And he will take upon him death, that he may loose the bands of death which bind upon him their infirmities, that his bowels may be filled with mercy, according to the flesh, that he may know how to succor his people according to their infirmities.” (Alma 7:11-12)

Our ONLY hope is our Lord Jesus Christ. There is no one else that can take on these pains, sufferings, sicknesses, etc. and transmute the darkness of it all so that we can be made whole. Yes, we are able and should take on others “stuff” when commanded to do so. In this manner we can become true saviors on Mt. Zion and learn some of what our Lord does. This is part of the process whereby we can become like Him.

The other thing that occurred to me is that it has taken time and experience for her to be able to take her friend’s suffering. If she had tried to do it before it most likely would have killed her. She is not the same person she was eight years ago; she now has much more experience, understanding and especially wisdom. This young woman is much more able and ready to take on such an experience. And now hopefully she understands the need to make use of our Lord’s atonement and give it all to Him so He can transmute the energy of it.

From these experiences I learned the absolute value of being able to hear what the Lord needs us to do in each and every moment, especially when dealing or helping others in their times of stress. On my way home when the Lord told me I was not yet done, I let the stress of the past several hours and also not being able to get to where my wife was to pick her up get to me. Because of that I was unable to clearly “see” or “hear” what the problem was, why I wasn’t “done yet.” It was a blessing to be

able to call someone that He allowed me to call in that moment and for her to give me the help I needed. I realized after the fact that it was like everything else, a teaching moment for me in so many aspects of how to do His work. I am grateful for His patience with this hard headed, sometimes imbecilic nutcase, me. He had prepared me in advance to not get “involved” emotionally or especially in fear over what was going on. He had taught me to kind of stand back and observe, to ask Him what to do. Especially when you have just cast the offending entity out and it is still cackling at you that you can’t get rid of it. I can’t stress enough the importance of doing everything His way, that is the ONLY way to do any of this. Actually that is the way we should be living our life, He is our example as He stated that He came here and did the will of His Father in all things. Should we do any different?

These experiences made me grateful for souls like my friend and the many other empaths the Lord has blessed us with. I don’t envy them, but am extremely grateful they are here. They do help out so much in the Lord’s work.

Chapter 16

ANCESTRAL HEALING

My four year old granddaughter was at my home last night. Her mother was upset and asked that I have a talk with her daughter who had bit herself on her arm and then blamed it on another child in order to get the other child in trouble. I was incredulous and asked her if she had done this. She informed me that she had and that she wasn't sorry for doing it. This was completely unlike her.

A short while later I realized I was in a funk over this and didn't know why. Then the thoughts of my father came flooding back to me. He had retired from truck driving and went to work part-time driving a school bus. The kids loved him, and he really loved them. He enjoyed driving all of them: elementary, junior high, and high school students. He was loving, but firm. Before the Christmas holidays one year, he had to kick two sisters off the bus that were older elementary age. They said they would "get him."

After the holidays were over, notes from these two girls and their two best friends were found on the bus which claimed Mr. Mendenhall had touched them in private places. My father was immediately fired, and then the police took over. I'm sure there was an arrest, there usually is, but I never asked. He went through four lie detector tests and passed all of them. But the four little girls were solid in what they were claiming. The

detective told my father that he would probably go to prison although he felt that my dad was innocent, but the girl's testimony prevailed. My father was devastated to say the least. He quit hugging or getting close to his own grandchildren. I watched this destroy him mentally and emotionally. He kept up a "good face," but he had changed. Finally, after more than a few months, the two friends recanted and told the police they made it all up because the two sisters wanted them to.

Nevertheless, my father was done with life. Soon after, he was diagnosed with cancer and transitioned (died) two months later. The line at his viewing was over 1 ½ hours long and extended a long ways outside the door of the mortuary. Many people told me later that they had come to the viewing, but left because the line was so long. He was truly loved for being such a kind man.

All of his trauma hit me last night like a ton of bricks. I never knew it had been so hard and had damaged him like this. I felt all the emotions my father had gone through, the complete feelings of helplessness and utter despair because he didn't do what he had been accused of. His emotions, pain, and suffering was affecting me tremendously. The rest of the night I was a walking zombie as I tried to ignore what I was feeling. When I prayed before bedtime, I asked if my earthly father still needed to get rid of these traumatic emotions from this incident. The answer was yes. I now realized that he had been gone for over twenty-four years and had continued suffering all this time. So I lay in my bed and asked the Savior to be there, which He was. I asked my father to come, and he did and even used a nickname he had given me, when he greeted me. I asked him for permission to be his proxy in a healing session. He granted it.

The first thing I did was ask my earthly father to stand at my head as I lay there on the bed. Then I asked the Lord Jesus

Christ, the True Healer, to take my master gene helix out of my chest and untwist it. I then asked that He allow the master gene helix of my earthly father to come out of his chest, untwist and “float” to be next to mine. This was accomplished. At this point I asked the Lord to replace all broken or damaged gene parts in my father’s strand, and to repair his helix. I then asked the Lord to allow me to take into myself all my father’s pains, sufferings, and any other negative feelings associated with this incident and then let them pass onto Him. I asked Him to transmute that dark, painful energy into light and let it go. He did. After all this was done everything was resolved, and I went to sleep completely exhausted.

Further Knowledge:

“Often we are taught by ignorant or evil-intentioned clergy that when we leave this mortal existence we go to ‘heaven’ or the spirit realm, and leave all cares and problems behind. All that happens is the mortal body is dropped; everything else goes along. The full personality, habits, thought patterns, and many of the deep, unresolved, issues remain intact. The passing into the heavenly plane does not automatically resolve us of the former mental or emotional pain from mortality. Granted, much is relieved such as the constant pressure to do as the world demands. However, the old habits and events which affected us to the core of our being while in mortality will still affect us after we leave this earth. Why don’t people simply hand over the burdens to the Savior upon transitioning? Guilt. Too many believe they are not worthy to even mention or say the Lord and Savior’s name, let alone to actually ask Him to take the pain away. There are too many who sincerely believe that the suffering and pain are deserved. Unfortunately, both the attitudes and deep seated beliefs are passed on to mortal family members by either genetics or teaching, both of which have exceptionally long lasting effects because severe emotional or

physical traumatic events damage our genes.

“Father Mendenhall was deeply harmed by what those he truly loved did. His love was great for children. Sadly, some children are not of love but are beings of anger, hate, and deep selfishness. As a result he felt confused and horribly punished for something he knew he could not have ever done. He had been well taught that men are to stand strong and take care of their own problems, but he could not solve this highly problematic situation, so he literally gave up. He mentally and emotionally broke and felt he was not worth anything other than departing this life and taking the anguish with him. In a sense it was his way of removing the problem, so his family would not have to suffer for what was brought upon his head.

“In truth, those girls were sent from the dark side to stop Father Mendenhall from spreading the love of Christ contained within his heart. That love healed many, which healing the devil hated. The best way to stop such a loving, kind, person is to have those who are most loved turn on them in a viscous manner which would cause long lasting effects. Of course society has to be involved, or it would not cause the desired devastation to the intended victim.

“What follows teaches what the Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, has requested be shown to give a good illustration how that which affects us during our mortal life can and will affect us after transitioning. True, people will do their best to show, according to their paradigm or what they believe is written as scripture, such things just can never happen because they believe God always heals everyone the moment they leave the mortal existence. Strange, there is not a single scripture stating any such thing.”

Three Distinct Generational Healings

“During the research to find appropriate records,

I felt a deep love and peace settle in my heart and mind. I also was shown that these records were in sets, same elements of operation, yet a difference.

“That is when the spirit said, ‘Notice there are three distinctly different generational healing types. The one, by far the most commonly used, is the proxy for many ancestors and progeny as a generalized whole. The second is a generalized or specific healing of the proxy wherein either the physical body and/or the helix is repaired by our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ,, which does, somewhat, affect both sides of the veil, but is mainly for the benefit of the mortal proxy.

“‘There is a third. It is rarely performed and is known to an extremely few mortals of Christ’s way. This one requires a mortal proxy the Savior would use to correct weaknesses, difficulties, or detriments of an immortal ancestor or, with specified permission, another non-ancestral mortal. There are ancestors who require additional mortal assistance to enable their progression.’ Elizabeth was one such ancestor.”

Her story follows as recorded by the proxy (Kitten) and submitted on January 19, 2006:

Within moments after I opened and stepped into the spirit world, a woman’s voice spoke firmly and distinctly, “I am ready.”

I asked the voice what she was ready for. She stated she was tired of where she was and was ready to move on. For a few seconds, all that could be seen was a person in semi darkness within a room with one small window with bars in it. At first it appeared to be a small prison. The walls were of cobblestones

and cement similar to that found on the streets of London, England. The floor was bare, compacted earth. No furnishings or other objects could be seen in the dim light. It was given the era was during the dark ages of the 1300's. The room was actually what we would call a basement, or dungeon, beneath a private home. The owner of the home was well-to-do.

A woman could be heard crying and pleading. As visual adjustment became better it was discerned a small, rather frail, yet beautiful woman, clad in basic rags, was chained to the wall which attached to a collar around her neck. A large man came into view. He commenced slapping and, in general, physically abusing the poor woman. He told her how worthless she was, being even lower than the dogs. After a few moments of the physical and verbal abuse he shoved her to the ground and took his pleasure upon her. After his sexual lusts were satisfied, he told her she was not even worth that much and left. She curled up in a ball and sobbed. This woman's name was Elizabeth. She has no surname by choice.

The spirit messenger of the Lord stated the woman had borne three children in this condition. Two daughters and one son in the midst of numerous miscarriages which were due to the physical abuse. The sire did not abuse the babies, but he had no emotional attachment to them, and viewed them as basic non-entities. Food and clothing were provided for them as they became of age and of need. The abuse of their mother was more than enough discipline the children learned to be amazingly quiet at a very tender age. Over the years the mother taught her tiny brood,

as best able, until they became old enough to fend for themselves in the outside world. The years of brutal abuse took its toll mentally, emotionally, physically, and spiritually upon the woman. She survived for the sake of her beloved and beautiful children. While the master was away and knowing her strength was ebbing very low, she bid her children a loving goodbye and had them leave the home, never to return. Once she knew they were going to be all right, with the last of her strength, and looking to God for deliverance, she quietly took her own life with an extremely sharp knife she used to slice through an artery. She wanted to have the choice and control of how she died.

How did such a beautiful woman become entrapped in such a brutal situation? Her own mother had sold her to the abusive man, a city magistrate, who upon seeing her beauty, lusted after her. The man was a knowing follower of Lucifer. The mother of this beautiful girl was jealous of her own daughter's beauty. She had been widowed sometime previous and was very poor financially. It was an easy matter for this evil magistrate to buy the daughter. The poor girl was imprisoned from that day until her death.

When Elizabeth left her body, she was too weak to even move toward the light. She simply lay, a dim, gray, wisp of a spirit. Within seconds four beautiful, bright female angels descended, gathered her still form into their arms, and very gingerly carried her to a hospital of light. She was placed upon a soft bed in a brightly lit room with windows that permitted a view of the beautiful landscape. She was never left alone. She was lavished with tangible love. She was

utterly and totally protected. However, it took years before she was even able to gain enough strength to sit up. After years of tender love and counseling, her strength increased to the point she was able to rise from the bed, walk about the room, and within the hospital. After her children had passed over from mortality, she was often visited by them.

In spite of all the wonderful loving care, counseling, and protection she could not shake the feeling of worthlessness nor the depression which clung to her like a cloud. **Because of the traumatic impact to her genes, her children and progeny were also affected.** All were unable to progress beyond a certain point. They were told about the Ordinance of Generational Healing. However, it takes a mortal body to accomplish such a task. Their desires were made known to those of heavenly authority who in turn made preparations for the ordinance.

Elizabeth was approached about the problem of the progression of her beloved children and progeny. She did not want to be a barrier to them. It was glad news when an ancestor consented to be proxy. At the appointed time all those who were involved—Elizabeth, her beloved caretaker angels, her beloved children and hundreds of years of progeny—the deceased mother, a deceased daughter of the proxy, and our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, gathered for the event.

At the beginning of the ordinance, Elizabeth was a light gray color with little light exuding from her, although her body had gained in density and looked considerably healthier. At first, only she could be dis-

cerned. The light was rather dim, while the feel of the general area belied the scene. After a few moments my eyes had made better adjustment, and I could barely see four others a short distance away in the dim light. Otherwise, it appeared she was somewhat alone. I felt a profound peace and love. She was sitting on the ground. Looking up at me she said, "I am ready. I am ready to move on. I am tired of being like this. Please help me."

Speaking directly to her, I kindly stated, "Only our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, could heal you."

She asked me who that was. I explained He was of great love, healing love. She would be safe with Him, for I knew and had met Him personally. I had been healed while being held in His powerful, profoundly loving arms.

She said, "Will He come to me?"

Kindly, gently, I said, "I will ask Him to come if you are ready."

Humbly, she said, "I am ready."

Looking up, I prayed for the Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, to please come and heal this ancestor who had been through such terrible horrors. She was asking for help and healing.

From a little distance, the Savior walked up to within a few steps of Elizabeth and without speaking he stood with His arms and hands held out to her. The love coming from Him was so tangible, I could feel it passing through my body. Elizabeth asked who this person was. I told her it was the Lord and Savior, Je-

sus Christ, the man of love previously spoken of. It was safe for her to go to Him. I knew so by personal experience, and in my mind, I projected what I had experienced with Him to Elizabeth. She rose and went into His arms. While she was thus held in such massive love she became lighter and lighter until she began to glow. It was then I could see we were within a field with trees and buildings in the distance, and other people were there also. The light was washing over them, too. With the exception of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, and the four caretaker angels (who were already of light), the other people were also lighting up. The light from the caretaker angels had been withheld so I would concentrate upon only Elizabeth. Suddenly, the rest of Elizabeth's progeny and my ancestors could be seen in a rather long line fanning out towards the buildings in the distance. It was then that I noticed my deceased daughter and mother. It was wonderful to see them again, in perfect health. It was beautiful to see so many people being healed through this one act of love.

Much strengthened and feeling considerably better, Elizabeth, speaking to our Savior, Jesus Christ, said she felt better, but still felt of little worth. She asked why she had to go through such a tremendous ordeal that nearly destroyed her spiritually?

Jesus Christ said, "You are of **great** worth! You completely fulfilled your mission. You carried your mission to the absolute total end. Before your birth into mortality, it was known the man you were with was a worshiper of Lucifer. It was also known he would destroy many women. To prevent that, you were

asked if you would go down and be the one who stayed mortal to prevent him from harming many others. You knew the trial would be severe. Knowing and understanding what the mission entailed, you consented to take upon your shoulders the mission. Beloved daughter, you are of **very great worth!** You saved the lives of many!”

His love became even greater and stronger towards her. Suddenly, she collapsed to the ground sobbing greatly. The four caretaker angels dropped to the ground surrounding her in their arms. Elizabeth was racked in sobs. As she cried, she became a little lighter as the pain, the memories of the terrible horrors, and the feelings of worthlessness considerably ebbed. Many in the line of ancestors were also sobbing. After a period, Elizabeth rose up and smiled for the first time in 706 years. She thanked and praised our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, and Heavenly Father for the healing and love.

The Spirit prompted me to ask her if she would like to hear about the gospel.

She asked, “What is the gospel?”

I said, “It is about our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, His love and His way of life, of love, and healing.”

“Is it like the gospel you have down there on earth?”

“Noooooo. It is very different. The gospel you will be taught is of the pure truth of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, and His way of life and love.”

“Then I would like to hear this gospel.”

Jesus Christ and the four caretaking angels began telling her about the gospel. Others of the family also asked if they could hear about this gospel, too. Immediately others came who were brilliant light beings. These brilliant light Angels went among the ancestors separating them into small groups. Each group was taught in the fundamental basics of the gospel of Jesus Christ.

I noticed a woman standing at a little distance away in the back on the other side of a very small picket fence that stretched beyond my vision in both directions. It was the line of demarcation between light and dark. She stood in the twilight on the dark side. It was the mother of Elizabeth who had come to observe. I asked if she would like to also hear of the gospel. She promptly put her hand up, waving me off. Shaking her head and turning away, she stated she did not want anything to do with it. She disappeared into the darkness of her own free will and choice. I felt sad there could be nothing done for her.

All those being taught and listening to the gospel truths brightened up a little more. It was a wonderful, beautiful sight to behold. After a while they all began moving toward a building in the distance. The building was for learning and teaching, filled with rooms with visual aids that would enhance the learning process. Elizabeth also went there for a little while, but had to return to the hospital for further counseling and care. She was not quite ready to leave the protection of the hospital. This generational healing process had made it possible for many, many people to make great strides in their progression into the light of our

Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, and God.

Immediately after, everyone with the exception of the Savior, moved toward the building of learning. He turned directly toward me. Expecting Him to simply smile and disappear, I was surprised when He spoke, *“Watch what I’m going to do.”*

Suddenly before my eyes was a beautiful light blue Helix floating in the air. It looked like a flat, light blue ladder. I realized it was a human gene. Part way down the Helix it looked like someone had taken a portion of it, crumpled it into a jumbled mass. The mass was made up of tiny, multicolored pieces that someone had squashed into a ball then carelessly stuck it on the Helix. Reaching with both of His hands, Jesus Christ took the mess apart and spread the pieces out away from the Helix. They simply floated in the air. I watched in total fascination as He took each and every tiny piece, one by one, and rebuilt the missing area of the Helix. The sides were partially done, then a rung, then more for the sides, and a rung, and so forth until the two long sections of the Helix joined with the newly completed section. Once the Helix was completed, He twisted it into the familiar looking one we are taught about. Then, to my utter surprise, with His right hand at the top end, with a gentle twist of the wrist it was set to slowly spinning. The Helix began to glow. Then I could actually see the many colors it was made up of. I never knew the Helix glowed nor spun. It was absolutely beautiful to see. I could feel the difference within my own being.

I have been informed, since, that Elizabeth has gained enough strength to be able to walk about outside of

the hospital, visit beloved relatives, go to classes, and is gaining more self confidence in herself and her worth. She is still in counseling at the hospital but no longer feels the need for confinement.

(End of proxy recording.)

After sharing Elizabeth's story, I wondered why it took such a terribly long time, even with all kinds of help, for Elizabeth and others to overcome the detriments and to progress.

The spirit answered:

"The mortal body enables the spirit to not only learn far more quickly but also greatly enhances the ability to either overcome weaknesses or to progress. The body functions similar to a condenser (a type of battery) whereby negative or positive energies are condensed into a much more powerful, collected charge that can be directed by the will of the spirit. The same energies in a scattered, diluted form are far more difficult to impossible to control or even be made use of."

The idea was given as a large heap of sand of every color of the spectrum. The hard part is to separate each grain of sand and put them into categorized little piles or containers. When that heap of sand is about 10 times larger than the person, it is going to take a very long time to sort it all out. Even spirits have to take breaks from their work. So, do not think they just slave away 24/7/365 without a break. Yes, eventually the work is done, but for the spirit person each grain must be examined, judged as to the

type, color, and chemical content then a decision has to be made where the grain belongs. For all people of the lower light and dark realms, the mental acuity is much dampened. It can and does take a very long time. The physical body is like a machine or a hopper that all the sand can be poured into. The body (machine or hopper) will then sort out each grain within microseconds, placing everything into a condensed form for far easier handling.

“As you remember, with Elizabeth, you took on all her pain and distress. The direct genetic connection between you two greatly facilitated the transfer. Therefore, she was easily able to use your body to transfer everything to you. Then your body was able to sort out and condense all of the negative elements and transfer them directly to the Savior who in turn transmuted it to light. The only way such a healing can occur is if the mortal proxy is completely willing to take the pain or negativism then give it to the Savior. The negativism, pain, or any distress is seen as darkness. With that darkness removed, Elizabeth was able to rapidly progress until she was able to finally leave the hospital where she had been for hundreds of years. Only a physical (mortal, translated, or celestial) body has the capability of condensing and controlling energies. Hence the necessity for a mortal proxy to assist in the enhanced progression of immortal spirit ancestors.”

(End of the Spirit’s explanation)

Wow!!! That was a lot. It was wonderful to be shown

how very important we are to our ancestors and the gift we really have with these physical bodies. The speed of, not only ours, but that of our ancestors is greatly enhanced with the use of these poor bedraggled and much undervalued bodies. Praise be to God and His son, our Savior, Jesus Christ.

In a literal sense, we can be saviors to our own families if we will. Doug was loving enough to take the pain his father still had and was able to transfer all to our Savior, Jesus Christ. By doing such, it heals not only his father, but also Doug. There is a tremendous amount we are never told about wherein we can heal others as well as heal ourselves. Of course there are people who actually enjoy the pain and general debilitations. They gain a lot of attention. For them it is advised to forget all that has been revealed above. The rest who desire healing for family and themselves, pray in the name of Jesus Christ and know, for yourself, the truth of what was taught, then seek what He is asking of you.

Further Possibilities (by the author):

All of this has made me wonder about something. Years ago Kitten and I were discussing the LDS temple and the endowment. She made the comment that one of the main purposes of the endowment was to teach us how to pierce the veil. In relation to what I experienced and what Kitten experienced with her ancestor this makes complete sense to me.

After learning how to pierce the veil, it would be nice to be able to enter into a room with an altar so people could practice what they were just taught. At least they could connect with their ancestors like I did with my father and work on healing them of a known problem. With an ancestor like Kitten experi-

enced, it would require going through the veil at a much greater level and seeing in vision what our ancestors' issues were, if that were required. At the very least we should learn how to hear across the veil in order to help heal our past generations and becoming what the scriptures call "Saviors on Mount Zion." If they need us to do other work by proxy, why would this be any different?

In regards to the living, most of our problems involve us not forgiving others of their trespasses. I read about an energy worker that quit other modalities and just concentrated on what the Spirit told him to do. It was very simple. For example, a woman came to him with a baby that continually spit up her milk. Eventually the infant had to be put on soy milk. This man asked the woman if she had gotten angry at anyone during her pregnancy. She indicated that she had, but had forgiven the individual. He felt that she hadn't completely. He asked if she felt that she had been spit upon by the other person. She said that indeed she felt that way. When she forgave the woman completely, her infant quit spitting up its milk. Amazing what true forgiveness will accomplish.

Chapter 17

HOLY GHOST

When Denise came home from the hospital in December of 1999 and we found out that she could see into the other side of the veil, I became curious about many things that I had studied. I wanted to know if she would confirm or witness what I had learned from my studies with the Spirit.

I was very careful to not tell her how I wanted her to answer or witness my gospel suppositions. One of these was about the Holy Ghost. By this I mean that I wouldn't say to her, "Denise, the Holy Ghost is such and such...Right?" Instead my queries went something like this:

"Denise, during your coma you spent those four days with the Lord Jesus Christ. Right?"

"Yes Dad," was her reply.

"Who else did He take you to meet?"

She told me of meeting Heavenly Father and how He persuaded her to come back to mortality. She met her grandpa, my father, her aunts and others that had transitioned across the veil, but she never mentioned the Holy Ghost. So one day I asked her more directly if Christ had also taken her to see the Holy Ghost. I wanted to learn what to me was a huge conundrum about the Holy Ghost, and I figured she knew but wasn't about to "spill the beans."

"No, Dad, He didn't take me to see the Holy Ghost," she said.

"Why not," I asked.

"He was busy," she answered.

"Denise, I don't buy that. You met and spent four days with the Lord Jesus Christ and you met the Father. Why wouldn't you meet the third member of the Godhead?"

"He was busy," she said again.

Now I was getting frustrated. I asked again, and she still refused to discuss it. Finally she stated that I didn't understand the Holy Ghost, so she was not allowed to talk about it.

"If I make a statement, will you tell me if you agree with it?" I asked.

"Yes."

"The Holy Ghost is your higher self," I stated.

"Oh, you do understand it," she replied. "Okay, we can talk about it." After a great conversation about the Holy Ghost, she stated, "Dad, we aren't allowed to teach this. People have to figure it out for themselves." We both abided by that until we were told to only teach it in our Jedi workshops unless people brought it up, and then we'd have a discussion about it. The only problem was I put my own preconceived ideas about how this works, my own paradigm, into the equation. I believed my learnings were correct, so I didn't ask any more questions of God. I would later find out how incorrect some of my notions were.

I had studied what Joseph Smith said about the Holy Ghost:

"...that the Holy Ghost is now in a state of Probation which if he should perform in righteousness he may pass through the same or a similar course of things that the Son has." (WJS, p. 245)

This made sense to me, since the Holy Ghost is my higher self, obviously I am in a state of probation.

Speaking of the Holy Ghost in *Preserving the Restoration*, Denver Snuffer said: “If the ‘personage’ that can ‘dwell’ in us refers to our own spirit, which can receive the mind of the Father and Son, then any conflict disappears.” (p. 67) I recommend this section of his book which explains the mind of God and the Holy Ghost. I was quite pleased when he brought up this doctrine in one of his ten lectures, because he openly talked about things we had shared privately.

He also stated:

“What exactly do we hope to become if not another member of the Godhead who will sit on the same throne as Christ and the Father? (Rev. 3:21) What then is Joseph Smith explaining in this *Lecture* about the mind of God?

“Moses 6:61 says, ‘Therefore it is given to abide in you; the record of heaven; the Comforter; the peaceable things of immortal glory; the truth of all things; that which quickeneth all things...’ [This definition of the Holy Ghost is the same definition found in *Lectures*. The ‘record of heaven’ can be in you because you came from God’s presence and knew Him, the Son, the noble and great, and participated there in choosing to follow God.] Joseph Smith said in Nauvoo, ‘I am learned, and know more than all the world put together. The Holy Ghost does, anyhow, and He is within me, and comprehends more than all the world: and I will associate myself with Him.’ (TPJS, p. 350) He was referring to ‘the record of heaven,’ the peaceable things: ‘...that which knoweth all things, and hath all power according to wisdom, mercy, truth, justice, and judgment.’” (Ibid.,

p. 72) “What exactly is dwelling inside of us and is a personage of spirit? It can be the ‘Holy Spirit,’ if we will receive it. What exactly do we hope to become if not another member of the Godhead who will sit on the same throne as Christ and the Father?” (Ibid. pp. 71-72)

Further Knowledge:

From our friend Kitten:

“How to help people see and understand that their own spirit is a ‘holy ghost’? When the Savior died on the cross, He gave up the ghost. (Matthew 27:50; Luke 23:46; Mark 15:37) In other words, that which animated the body (the spirit body) separated from the mortal body. Joseph was trying to bring others to the understanding we are all spirits having a mortal experience. In a word, the ‘holy ghost’ is—us. We were a spirit, a.k.a. a ghost, before being stuffed into a mortal body. We are able to communicate with other holy ghosts (angels) and even the Gods if we will allow it.

“For those who object to the plural Gods: Heavenly Father is a God; Jesus Christ is a God. That’s two Gods right there.

“The problem comes in when we refuse to connect the mortal to the spiritual. Much is lost as a result. True, the spiritual mind can and will direct the physical mortal mind and body, but it does not have to be fully connected to perform as needed. That silver cord (NDErs have seen) is all that is needed. Generally, for the sake of experience, there is a partial integration of the two. When the spirit is fully integrated with the mortal body, then it is vastly more difficult for any dark entities to slither in and take over.”

More Understanding:

At one of our workshops, the question was raised about how much of our spirit is actually in our body? Denise was there so I

asked her to take a look at the twelve people there (all of which were really amazing individuals) and give us a percentage of how much of each person's own spirit actually resided in their body.

She looked and said, "About five percent."

This threw me for a loop for a second, then I realized that it required laying on of hands by one with authority to get the rest of that spirit into the body. Once again, my preconceived ideas were leading me to a wrong paradigm.

I had understood (just as my church teaches), that the Holy Ghost—our own spirit or as some call it, our "higher self"—can come and go in our life according to our obedience to God's commandments. We teach that people investigating the gospel can have the Holy Ghost come and witness to the truthfulness of things, etc. But if we are disobedient, it will leave us. That would be true for all people in regards to truth. Also the amazing part is that apparently not much of the spirit of the Holy Ghost is needed to witness truth to us.

Over time I came to understand that you can have the Holy Ghost "permanently" when someone touched by God lays hands on your head and actually gives you the Holy Ghost. This was also something that Denver would eventually teach in his ten lectures and also write about in his book *Preserving the Restoration*.

"There is a difference between receiving the Holy Ghost because of baptism, as Joseph and Oliver received it initially (see JS-H 1:70, 73) and receiving it by the laying on of hands from one who is 'sealed' to have this power." (p. 198)

A man was visiting a friend whose daughter was able to see through the veil to a limited degree. The father asked the visi-

tor, “Do I have the Holy Ghost permanently or not?” The visitor had no idea, so he asked the man’s daughter to look through the veil and see if her father had it permanently.

“I don’t know what that looks like,” she said. The visitor didn’t either, so he couldn’t tell her what to look for. Then the Spirit gave him a clue.

He said, “Hey, what if I lay hands on your dad and give him the Holy Ghost. If he already had it permanently, there would be no change. But if he didn’t, then you might be able to see what happens.”

“Okay,” she agreed.

The visitor had the authority to give the Holy Ghost permanently because he had been in the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ and the Father. They had made covenants with him and laid hands on him giving him sealing power. He put his hands on the father’s head and voiced the ordinance upon him, using the proper words, meaning the father was not told to “receive the Holy Ghost.”

When the ordinance was finished, the daughter exclaimed, “That was so cool! It was like electricity came down and permanently joined him to his higher self.”

The father had his answer and also the knowledge of what happens when the ordinance is done properly with authority.

What the daughter saw was her father’s spirit (ghost) coming into him permanently, as long as he accepts the ordinance. A connection was made, allowing him a “permanent” spiritual connection with the heavens—angels and Gods. It looked “electrical” to her because it was light. Can this connection be broken? Of course, as all things can through unrighteousness. Even if it is lost through unrighteousness, the individual can still connect with their spirit (Holy Ghost) and it will testify to the

truth of all things. It can connect into the record of heaven and do all things mentioned in Moses 6. But it is not a “permanent” condition. As most of us have experienced, it can come and go. As stated, the “permanent” connection requires someone that has been *“ordained and sealed unto this power to lay on hands and give the gift of the Holy Ghost. The Book of Mormon explains this is confined to those Christ has touched with His hands. In other words it is only a...witness who has beheld Him and been ordained by Him who has this power.”* (Ibid. p. 198)

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

“How to help others see the fact they are actually three major parts: intellect, spirit, and mortal all working (we hope) in unison. It is amazing how many people are not quite the sum of the parts. Although Joseph Smith, Jr. held the office of Testator, we still have our own “holy ghost” that will testify of the truth of all things IF we are of light and connect with others of light who are living in the, so called, world of spirits. The tricky part is bonding the physical with the spiritual which seems pretty impossible. Granted, far too many not only forget, but appear to have left the intellectual part waaaaay out in space somewhere (between unknown galaxies perhaps?) and arrived with a physical body and enough spirit to be considered trainable. The spirit body and mind (intelligence) know vastly more than the mortal is willing or able to know of.”

More Understanding:

As Kitten mentioned many people come here with just the “silver cord” attached to their bodies without their spirit (Holy Ghost) in their physical being. This is the cord that those who have had a near death experience see when they leave their body. This cord keeps their spirit attached to that physical body. (Cut that cord and the person will transition.) That is why when

Denise looked at those people, she saw about 5% of their spirit present in their bodies, or as Kitten said, "There is a partial integration of the two," and we "arrived with a physical body and enough spirit to be considered trainable." For this reason the Gods of Light have provided a way to "attach" your spirit (ghost) to your body, which is by a priesthood ordinance by one they have touched and given permission to do so. I asked Denise how much of a person's spirit does she see has come into the individual that has received this ordinance. "Up to fifty percent," she answered. "It is a process."

I know that some will have indigestion over this concept so I'm going to repeat it again, just as I reconfirmed with Denise and Kitten today as second and third witnesses.

Most people come here to this earth with very little of their spirit housed in their body. Many will just have the silver cord that attaches that physical body to the spiritual body. The "Holy Ghost" is you, your ghost or spirit and you, as Joseph stated, "[are] now in a state of Probation which if [you] should perform in righteousness [you] may pass through the same or a similar course of things that the Son has." (WJS, p. 245) After baptism we can receive the Holy Spirit or Holy Ghost (same thing in this instance. In other instances the Holy Spirit is something different) as Denver Snuffer mentioned above, or we can receive it (or as Kitten might say, have it "stuffed" into our mortal body) on a more permanent basis through an ordinance by someone with sealing power. This permanence is not what happens after baptism in my church when someone is baptized and has hands laid on them to confirm them a member of the church and to "receive the Holy Ghost." If it creates/causes a permanent connection then these sighted people would see that connection to their spirit body or Holy Ghost. That tight connection just isn't there. There are very few permanent connections because true sealing power is only found in those who have experienced a

partial or full redemption, meaning the Father and Son have literally laid hands on them, giving them the authority to perform the permanent sealing ordinance.

When we have hands laid on us by someone with true sealing power, and we accept the ordinance, then more of our own spirit will reside in us. If not, we still have enough to “be trainable” as Kitten said. She also said, *“The spirit body and mind (intelligence) know vastly more than the mortal is willing or able to know.”* Might it be important to have as much of our spiritual self into our physical body as we possibly can? Especially since our mortal body doesn’t know that much and according to the scriptures our spirit and intelligence know *“the record of heaven; the Comforter; the peaceable things of immortal glory; the truth of all things; that which quickeneth all things...”* (Moses 6:61) Might it be important to connect with our own Holy Ghost and our intelligence and make them become one with our mortal body? How is this accomplished? Would we then be “healed?”

We have discussed the ordinance required to bring the spiritual part of us into our mortal self to a much greater level. Now how do we connect to the “intelligence” part of us that, as Kitten put it, may be “waaaaay out in space somewhere (between unknown galaxies perhaps?)”

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

“Redemption (to actually be redeemed) **brings all three parts of our being into a single whole.** If anyone thinks or believes they are redeemed then they are not. The Savior, Jesus Christ, along with other Celestial assistants, will perform the ordinance. It is a literal healing of the entire entity, to bring wholeness. Almost immediately after one is redeemed or healed, that Being has the former and present memories restored. The restored memories will be, simultaneously, a hardship and blessing to

bear. Those who have been redeemed are amazingly silent.”

Further Understanding:

This is why it is quite easy for someone with spiritual sight and knows what to look for, to see if those claiming redemption actually have received it or not. If the person is a man, he would have a Patriarchal priesthood mantel over his head. They would see the Father and Son abiding with the individual. The permanent connection with their higher self or Holy Ghost would be evident as all three parts of their being would be in their physical body. This would make them a “perfect” or complete and whole person. Of course all of this is only accomplished through and because of our Lord Jesus Christ and His atonement. Well actually the woman would have the same markers. There are other “markers” but this should be enough for our understanding. It has always been interesting to me when I ask my sighted daughter or Kitten about someone that has claimed to have these things. (The person doesn’t have to be in their presence to “see” them.) I still stand by my claim that I know of two people that have been redeemed.

It is important to understand that just because someone has “seen” the Lord Jesus Christ or been in or felt His presence does not mean they have been redeemed. I have met many dozens of people whose veils have lifted enough to see the Spirit world. Their testimonies are wonderful and amazing. Many of them have seen Him through the veil, others have seen Him during a near-death-experience. I have been in His presence, seen His face, felt His hands on my head, audibly heard His voice many times, felt His hands on mine as I voice blessings, and more. But I am not a redeemed man; though that is my greatest desire. Redemption is so much more than just the experience of seeing Him, as Kitten has shared.

Chapter 18

TRAUMA BASED MIND CONTROL

This past year my wife and I took three of our grandchildren to a movie about a bear called *Paddington*. In the movie he is “alive” and when he is at the train station in London he can’t find anyone to take him home with them. All the sudden our four year old granddaughter started to sob and yelled out, “No one wants him!” Shocked, we looked at her and realized she was under trauma. We tried to console her, but she kept saying that no one wanted Paddington and kept sobbing. She finally calmed down and started to watch the movie again. Did this imprint on her? She is four, and her mind is not yet formed. She believes everything you tell her. There is no guile in her. Of course, in some respect this imprinted on her. All trauma does in one way or another. To her the bear was a real person, and no one wanted him. That was traumatic to her. (But to help us, they put out stuffed little Paddington bears that we can purchase for our little ones to alleviate the trauma, so they can provide the needed love.)

We have discussed Satanism in previous chapters and how the Hollywood version is the most visible, yet not the most practiced. They practice love of themselves and mind control over others to get their power. A much smaller aspect of Satanism is trauma-based mind control and the Hollywood style rituals that have also been done since the time of Cain. This is

a difficult chapter, but a really important one in order to understand what is going on.

In *Conquering Spiritual Evil* I discussed the former LDS chapel that a family bought and used as a home and also as their place of business. One of the daughters had her veil drop when she was sixteen years old and then could see what was in the home that the family had been fighting for many years previous. We also write about it in this book in the chapter on portals.

She was able to talk to the young children that had been ritually sacrificed, which opened satanic portals into the building. The three were twelve years old, eight years old, and a newborn baby. Are those significant ages to our Father? Does the Adversary mock God? This was not the first time I had been introduced into the world of satanic rituals with all of its baggage.

The church of Satan is more open now about what they are about than ever before, at least in my lifetime. In the past it was discussed in quiet whispers. People would have memories of attending rituals and tell others. In Utah it came to a head when a memo was leaked that was sent by Bishop Glenn L. Pace of the Presiding Bishopric that confirmed there was indeed, satanic ritual abuse in the Church. Below is an article published by the Deseret News, on Oct. 25, 1991:

“Officials from The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints said Friday they are evaluating reports that satanic cults dedicated to sexually abusing children are operating within the church.

“The issue arose Thursday with television news reports about an internal church memo suggesting that as many as 800 people may be involved in the practice along the Wasatch Front. ‘Satanic worship and

ritualistic abuse are problems that have been around for centuries and are international in scope,' said a statement issued Friday by the church public affairs department. 'While they are, numerically, not a problem of major proportions among members of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, for those who may be involved they are serious.'

"The church has strived to help local ecclesiastical leaders understand and deal with the issue, the statement said, citing a Sept. 18 message from the First Presidency 'reaffirming their concern about such distasteful practices and encouraging vigilance in detecting and treating situations that may arise.'

"The memo describing the satanic activities was written July 19, 1990, by Bishop Glenn L. Pace, of the Presiding Bishopric. It was leaked to local media, including the Salt Lake Messenger, an anti-LDS publication that published the memo.

"The 12-page document, addressed to the Strengthening Church Members Committee, includes six pages of LDS scripture citations to back Bishop Pace's charge that satanic cults do exist.

"In his memo, Bishop Pace said satanic abusers in Utah 'represent a cross-section of the Mormon culture.' The cult's members, he wrote, may include Young Women and Young Men leaders, bishops, a patriarch, a stake president, temple workers and members of the Tabernacle Choir. The abuses have even taken place in church meeting houses, he said.

"Bishop Pace is one of 27 community leaders sitting on a ritual-abuse subcommittee of the Governor's

Commission for Women and Families. The committee, whose members also include therapists, law enforcement personnel, attorneys, religious leaders, former U.S. Attorney Brent Ward, an aide to Sen. Orrin Hatch, an assistant attorney general and first lady Colleen Bangerter, has been meeting since February 1990.

“In response to questions about the memo, a church spokesman said, ‘The church prefers not to discuss internal communications designed to deal with this sensitive and difficult matter.’

“The Deseret News in September published a four-part series on the subject of ritualistic sexual abuse of children, and included information from people—therapists, law enforcement officers and social scientists—who believe an organized network of satanists employ twisted rituals in committing such crimes as child sex abuse, cannibalism and human sacrifice.

“The series also included interviews with people from the same professional groups who say the allegations are untrue.

“On Sept. 18, the First Presidency, in a letter to priesthood leaders, noted that they occasionally receive reports of people who engage in ritualistic practices including forms of satanic worship and cautioned members ‘not to affiliate in any way with the occult or those mysterious powers it espouses.’

“Their statement continued, ‘Such activities are among the works of darkness spoken of in the scriptures. They are designed to destroy one’s faith in Christ, and will jeopardize the salvation of those who

knowingly promote this wickedness. These things should not be pursued as games, be topics in Church meetings, or be delved into in private, personal conversations.'

"The First Presidency advised bishops and branch presidents who encounter such activities to seek counsel from their stake or mission leaders, who themselves could seek guidance from area presidencies.

"We express our love and concern to innocent victims who have been subjected to these practices by conspiring men and women,' the statement said. 'We are sensitive to their suffering and assure them that help is available through the mercy and love of our Savior, Jesus Christ.'

"According to those who believe that satanic activities are occurring, victims are tortured sexually in ceremonies that mock religious rituals. The rituals are designed to force the victims to dissociate their pain, to the point that they develop multiple personalities. In this way, the torturers gain absolute control over their victims.

"The torturers allegedly conceal themselves in their communities' dominant religions.

"Therapists who treat the victims say they don't necessarily remember their torture, until something triggers a buried memory. 'I'm sorry to say that many of the victims have had their first flashbacks while attending the temple for the first time,' Bishop Pace wrote in his memo.

“But therapists who doubt the phenomenon say many of the allegations are suspect because they are disclosed under hypnosis, and that the alleged victims are confusing fact with fantasy.

“And many law enforcement officers say the dearth of evidence invalidates claims of an organized satanic network.” (Emphasis added.)

Soon after the memo was published and everyone knew about it, Bishop Pace was sent to another continent by the LDS church and was gone for quite a few years. All of this quietly went away. The medical professionals came up with “False Memory Syndrome” to explain that all of this was just fantasy and not real. The people all made it up or had a false memory of it. Now where is that rug? I have a huge pile here...

I had seen “rituals” portrayed in scary movies or television shows, but really didn’t believe it was real. Yes, you read about how anciently they performed rituals and sacrificed children, or the favorite is the local virgin girl. But that was those pagans of long ago, in the Bible—where even ancient Israel sacrificed and ate their children—or the Book of Mormon where they did the same, to the Incas and especially those “nasty” Aztecs.

Then my life gets turned upside down as a result of a daughter’s coma and a partial veil. Soon after this we start meeting people who would tell us they were victims of ritual abuse. One was a young man whose grandmother inflicted ritualistic abuse on him, and he remembered it all. A woman in her forties told me her mother did it to her. Her mother, who lived back east, would call her and say a “trigger” word. The next thing she knew, she was on a plane heading back east for more programing. She realized what was going on when she started taking her kids back there too, and their behavior changed. We wrote about another woman in our book, *Possibilities*. Then I

found out about Bishop Pace's memo. I read a privately published book by a victim from Sandy, Utah. I spent many hours talking to her about it.

After I moved to my current city, someone called me from Idaho and told me to go to the senior home and talk to a woman there. She was about thirty-five years old. I interviewed her several times. She had grown up in a satanic cult in Salt Lake City. She described becoming a "breeder" meaning when she was able to have children at age thirteen, she would get pregnant in a ritual by the satanic priest, and they'd take the baby, usually at 8 months, for a sacrifice. At sixteen she was required to take her own baby's life that they had just taken out of her. She was in training to be a high priestess. At about thirty years of age she told her mother she was walking away from it. Her mother told her that they would kill her. Her response, "Good, I deserve to die for what I have done." They have left her alone.

I read a book from an LDS woman named, Anne Johnson Davis, called *Hell Minus One*. She describes what was done to her. If you can stomach such things I'd recommend reading it. Only after her mother confessed to doing it, did the LDS church excommunicate her. The police didn't do a thing about it, even with her confession.

Another difficult read is *Paperdolls—Healing from Sexual Abuse in Mormon Neighborhoods* by April Daniels and Carol Scott. One of these women is a grandmother whose grandchildren were victims. The other was a victim herself. These two ladies share their experiences of what happened in an LDS neighborhood in Salt Lake City. I believe that their revelations about this came out just before the Pace memo was released. After it was released nothing more was done it seems. This is an extremely difficult read because of the content and what was done to these children by supposedly "religious" neighbors. One of the mind

control methods used to keep the children silent was to kill a kitten in front of them and then tell the children if they ever told anyone about what happened, they would have the same happen to them, or they would be run over by the perpetrator's truck.

Lest you believe I am picking on the LDS, please rent the movie *Spotlight*. It won the Academy Award for Best Picture. It is the true story of the Boston Globe's investigative reporters finding out and reporting the abuse by Catholic Priests mainly against young boys. The Catholic Church knew about it but paid off families and others, effectively keeping it under wraps for decades, moving the perpetrators to a different diocese where they would do it again. This wickedness is in every society, religion, and government in the world.

It is called trauma-based mind control. It is one of the worst evils on this planet. Who are the perpetrators? Please re-read the Deseret News article above, but make sure to include governments. Satanic Ritual Abuse, or SRA, is in all religions and everywhere else, in all levels of society. But like the law enforcement officers said in the article, *"the dearth of evidence invalidates claims of an organized satanic network."* (Actually I believe the church of Satan is very organized and has a huge network.) The human brain has a natural defense mechanism which compartmentalizes cases of extreme trauma. The mind creates an amnesiac barrier around the traumatic event, so the person can go on leading a "normal" life and not have to relive the horrific experiences.

"Nazi scientists learned that if you could systematically traumatize someone, and start with children, particularly under the age of five, you could shatter a person's mind into a honeycomb of self-contained compartments. They then use techniques to access the different sections

of the brain while the subject is hypnotized. There various compartments, unaware of the other's existence, can be programmed like a computer to carry out tasks. Using trigger words and hypnotic keys, sounds, or signals, these alter personalities can be pulled to the front or pushed back according to the will of the programmer. One self-contained fragment of mind becomes a person's core, or front personality, on the conscious level and is returned to the subconscious when another compartment is accessed. After the victim has performed a task, they 'forget' what they have done. Entire 'Systems' can be embedded into a person's mind, each with its own theme, access codes, and trigger words. Their closest friends won't even realize that who they know is only one compartment of their mind." (Weird Stuff, Operation Creature Culture, Part 2, p. 66)

MK-Ultra is the program the CIA started in the 1950's to study mind control. MK-Ultra had at least 147 different sub-projects. Many combined drugs such as LSD with other forms of mind control. One offshoot was the U.S. Government Defense Intelligence Agency's TOP SECRET Project Monarch. It was a mind control program which recruited multi-generational incest abused children. The name comes from the Monarch butterfly. I will cease going this direction because what they have done is quite deep and horrific. If you choose to explore it further, one example is from Cathy O'Brien whose incestuous father would regularly loan her out as a young child to "his friends, local mobsters, Masons, relatives, Satanists, strangers and police officers." Even today we are reading headlines of Jimmy Savile in Britain and his pedophilic problems, and how he procured young boys for the political elite there. They have been covering it up for decades in England and is just now coming out. But I seriously doubt much will be done about it, the problem goes high up in leadership there to be fully exposed.

You can read about Cathy O'Brien in her book, *Trance-Formation of America*, and how we have the same problem here on a national level with our so called elite, also in the music industry, movie industry, and military. She explains how they develop government sex slaves and what they do. Is what she says true?

Well, a man and woman came into my life for several years. The wife's memories came back, and she felt she was one of these people that had been programmed. I didn't know; it was all so strange to me. But I will tell you that she didn't have any fingerprints. Somehow where she should have had fingerprints had been made smooth, like glass. You read these things and then meet someone that was like that. If she tried to read the scriptures she'd go into a trance. Her husband finally figured it out and found out what "trigger" words made her come out of the trance. It was quite interesting to quote a scripture and see her immediately go into a trance state. It was strange indeed.

"The stimuli which bring about particular programmed behaviors and states of consciousness are called triggers. These can be anything from words, sounds, tones, colors, symbols or hand held objects. Virtually any stimulus can be used for the purpose of eliciting a pre-programmed response if that particular cue was previously used as a signal for a repetitively traumatizing procedure. Practically anything can be used as a trigger to create a trance and dissociation, and the corporate world is set up in a way that the victim is surrounded by as many triggers in everyday life as possible." (Ibid. p. 76)

Then I read and studied the *Franklin Cover Up*, by John DeCamp. Are these things real? I happen to be around gifted people that tell me what the Lord has shown them, and yes, they are real. Then I watched a cute little show on BYU TV called, *Granite Flats*, where they actually use MK-Ultra as one of the main plot lines. This was the name for a secret CIA project under Director Allen Dulles, starting around 1950. The CIA ad-

mited in 1977 that it had spent millions of dollars studying voodoo, witchcraft, and psychic warfare. What this little TV series showed was based in truth. After WWII our government brought in thousands of Nazi scientists through a project called "Paperclip." Many of these were mind control scientists and others that had done the vilest things imaginable to children. Our government experimented on many children and adults with mind control and worse. The fact that these women came out exclaiming what they had done to them as sex slaves didn't surprise me.

Now in our day satanists are becoming bold in their movement. Where before they were "under the rug" so to speak, now they are open. They have become emboldened and gone public with their Black Masses, Baphomet statues, and other such things. World Net Daily on August 24, 2015, published an article on the internet by Leo Hohmann titled, *"Ex-Satanist: Babies ritually aborted for devil."* It discusses former Satanist Zachary King who converted to Christianity in 2008. Mr. King tells of performing 141 abortions, many at abortion clinics dressed in his satanic priesthood robes, and the power he felt as he helped with the abortion rituals, being able to kill. *"So the women knew why I was there, they know there's a satanic ritual going on."* He also said, *"In Satanism, killing something or the death of something is the most effective way of getting your spell accomplished. As far as trying to get Satan's approval, to give you something that you want, killing something is the best way to go. Killing something is the ultimate offering to Satan, and if you can kill an unborn, that is the ultimate goal."*

The article mentions others who were interviewed and talked about how messed up these people's minds are. *"Women getting pregnant with the intent to kill their babies and women being told they could make themselves holy by offering up their baby as a sacrifice."* It talks of women that become "breeders" and have baby after

baby that they offer up to sacrifice in the clinics. I mentioned the woman that I interviewed here in my town who had become a “breeder” at age thirteen.

I will stop there except to say that they also said, *“the one common denominator that links most of the operatives in the abortion industry is a hatred of Christianity.”*

We truly are in the last days. If we are now as wicked as in the days of Noah, we have a problem. Because in that day they at least had Enoch and the city of Light there for a while before being taken up. We don’t have that or a people ready to receive our Lord Jesus Christ. When He comes, it will not be pretty for those that are not ready. What are we doing to get there?

These things need to come to light, though I’m not sure it will help much. In the past, roaches scattered when the light was shown on them. As I said, evil has become emboldened and is now is our face, and they are not going away.

I had the chance to travel to another state to meet a family counselor. This man is awesome. His state went after him for “muscle testing” clients. As you know, medical professionals don’t muscle test; they just vaccinate. So he let his license go, and then our church went after him for casting out devils and giving blessings in his practice. (God is not allowed in your business, nor are you allowed to mention him, and for heaven’s sake don’t cast out demons! It might help heal your client.)

We chatted about many things, but the main reason I wanted to go was to ask about SRA. He has had much experience with dealing with it. I don’t know what his success is. I didn’t ask. But I did find out he knows it is real.

He told me of woman that would get up in the night and travel to a local area to be in Satanic rituals. She took her children along. As they traveled in the family van to the ritual, they

would change from one alter (personality) to another to another and to another. This way there was no memory of the ritual for the “Molly Mormon” housewife. It was compartmentalized in one of the other alters, at least four levels away. This is what people have a hard time wrapping their minds around. Because of the severe trauma they received as children and then programmed, they don’t remember doing these things. Most will have many personalities or alters they developed in order to handle what was done to them. Now-a-days they call it DID—Dissociative Identity Disorder.

He then said the most interesting thing. He said he was working with her one day, and she mentioned that she had been in a ritual all night in another far off city. He asked her how she could have been there all night and still be able to be at his office first thing that morning? She had no answer. He found out the answer was that *she went to the ritual in spirit*. And it was the same as if she had gone there in her body. This completely shocked me, but it sure explained a lot.

After I came home, I called the three people I know that are really sighted, two women and a man. All three confirmed what he had declared. They also confirmed that most (80 to 90%) of what goes on satanically is in the spirit, but people feel and believe that it was physical. The fact that we have the ability to go in the spirit and experience things and then manifest in the physical world should make more sense after reading this book. But it reminded me again of when I went to Kitten’s home where there was a spiritual battle going on. When we walked into her home, we could physically feel the evil pressing down on us. She immediately dropped to the floor, and I sat on the floor against her couch. The evil was palpable. It was pressing hard against us. Then when I went outside in the spirit and participated in the “battle” that was going on, I was there as if I were physical, yet I was in the spirit. I didn’t remember

my physical body sitting on her floor against the couch because I was outside fighting. I guess you could say my consciousness was with my spirit; my body totally forgotten. My body was my spirit. If it had been a satanic ritual, I would have declared that I had been there, had participated fully in it because it would have been true, as it was with helping Kitten. I can still remember fighting in that battle as if it were yesterday.

So what if this had been a satanic ritual that I had been taken to by some entities. Would it have been as real? Would I have been able to tell the difference between that experience and a “physical” one? Isn’t everything spiritual but only vibrating at a different frequency? What if those doing the satanic ritual dressed themselves to look like religious leaders whom I was familiar with, so I “perceived” that it was the real person doing those things to me? Is that a possibility?

Kitten was taken many times as a child in the spirit across the veil down to hell and tortured. When she came back she had cuts and marks on her physical body that turned into scars. Our young friend Alyssa came and spoke about growing up in the old LDS chapel her family bought and how dark entities would make cuts on her body, move things around, and write on the fogged up mirror in her bathroom.

In chapter thirteen of *Conquering Spiritual Evil*, I quoted from the unpublished manuscript of an LDS missionary in Brazil when he taught a young man named Mario who was in training to be a priest in a satanic cult. He experienced smelling incense in the room and then saw that “*the incense was flowing out of Mario’s nose and ears. We could see it like a light smoke that appeared from his nose and ears as his head shook.*” The missionaries also watched when “*something invisible started to drag him like a rag doll onto the staircase. His arms, legs, head and body were all bumping and bouncing loosely and hard on each of the steps as they*

pulled him rapidly down." Mario also floated up to the ceiling stiff as a board. Eight grown men tried to pull him down but could not. This man also reported an experience in which he and another man watched footprints coming towards them in the snow with no visible person making the footprints. He and his friend literally ran through their apartment door without bothering to open it to get away. In chapter fifteen of *I See... Awake!* I wrote about several instances where evil spirits caused cuts, made bite marks on a woman, and made a child walk up a wall backwards, all with medical eyewitnesses present.

The bottom line is evil can and does manifest physically and can do damage to mortals, whether they take you spiritually to hell or enter your physical body and cause problems. Also, it can be difficult to determine if something happened in just the spirit or if it was a physical reality. For example, when a person is taken in spirit to a high mountain by the Lord, he will report that he didn't know if he was in his body or not.

Paul wrote in 2 Corinthians:

"I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) such an one caught up to the third heaven.

"And I knew such a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;)

"How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter."
(12:2-4, emphasis added)

The fact that many people have attended or participated in dark rituals but were not there physically isn't surprising. They **were** there. Their physical body was elsewhere. If it can happen in the light, it can happen in the dark. As Paul said, he didn't

know if he was in the body or out. It was the same to him either way. Ask Joseph Smith if the fist vision was a spiritual or physical event and he would probably answer “yes.” It was both. It was done through his third eye, just as when he had the vision in D&C 137 about his brother Alvin:

*“The heavens were opened upon us, and I beheld the celestial kingdom of God, and the glory thereof, **whether in the body or out I cannot tell.**” (vs. 1, emphasis added)*

With how evil the world is now getting, those of darkness are having an easier time manifesting into our physical reality. I know a single mother who called me asking for help with her daughter. Seems the daughter, who can see entities, told her mother that she had some dark things in her. The mother looked at her daughter’s stomach and then laid her hand on it. She could feel the demon in the daughter moving, it was physical, but yet this demon was spiritual. As I said it is becoming easier for them to manifest into our reality. *“For by the power of my Spirit created I them; yea, all things both spiritual and temporal —”* (D&C 29:31) Why is it easier now? Because those of a temporal nature on this earth are vibrating at such a low frequency that those that are of a dark spiritual nature are closer to the frequency of us temporal beings. Remember, that Lord stated that *“His spirit will not always strive with man.”* (2 Nephi 26:11, Gen. 6:3, D&C 1:33, Moses 8:17, Ether 2:5) It left several years ago and it is now up to us individually to connect with our God. Because it does not strive with us any more, it is now easier for evil to come up and manifest in all of its lovely forms.

One of my sighted friends stated, *“Evil knows what they are doing with much success, abusing and controlling bodies. Misconduct with young creates alters — a split.”* This person went on to say, *“There is a systematic and wide spread effort to create an army in the Middle East of physical people to use who believe they get power from*

the cruel acts and want to gain more power to become a greater force for evil, to eventually control and rule the world—Master Mahan.” Wow, does that sound like headlines from Europe with what is going on there with men from the Middle East?

I was also told, *“There is more breaking of children in the Middle East, Africa, and Asia than ever before. Satan is trying to overcome the agency of man worldwide.”*

We discussed how with the world going this direction that soon instead of it being 80% to 90% spiritual, it would soon be 50% of the rituals happening in the spirit, the other 50% would be physical, in our physical reality. It is rapidly going that direction, it must because we are to become as in the days of Noah where even the most evil perversions will be accepted. I was told that “the trauma to the spirit is so great that it no longer resists or it allows another spirit to take over.” That is why so much of this can happen in the spirit. This war is to destroy agency to make it so that no one gets anything out of this life.

I have given you material to study if you wish. I studied because I met some of these victims. They are beautiful people and just want their mind and life back. To say that SRA doesn't exist, or that it is just DID, or false memory is a travesty. There were times when I was reading the material that I had to put it down. It was that hard, yet they *lived* this. Satan mimics our God of Light. He has taken the idea of sacrifice and made it into something that degrades women and children. Yet in their minds they are doing something great that their god requires, which they feel gives them power and blessings from their god.

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

“In great prayer and pleading to Heavenly Father, that which was shown years ago never comes to fruition. Because they are

hunted like some of the worst animals known to man, Christians will go 'underground' to hide their religion. If not, they will be dragged out and killed. Even now they are being hunted, tortured, and killed in several countries. In European and North American countries, Christian churches are bombed and burned. People are being shot by a supposed mass shooter in public places. Look at the news. Those bombings, fires, and shootings in public areas are not what you are led to believe. They are killing as many Christians as possible in a single incident. War has been declared against all who have any belief in our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ! It is open war!

"The web site *The Conservative Info* gives much that may or may not open the Christians' eyes. Naturally too many are so well brainwashed by their leaders/clergy, they believe either Christ will totally protect them or their leaders will because God talks and guides them so the flock is well protected. HOG-WASH! They are being lied to by the very ones who are worshipers of Satan!

"Ronnie Coffee wrote:

'On the surface, war seems like a harsh word to apply to what we are beginning to see more and more of in the press, on the news and in the courts. War is the attempt to destroy and subdue what one considers its enemy. This 'war' is not being waged against any other religion. It seems like these groups that are waging this 'war' are more than willing to embrace any other religion as long as it does not name the name of Christianity. Anything that bears the name of Christ or relates to Christ in any way is legal game for their attacks. I could go into detail about the attacks against the Ten Commandments, Christmas, manger scenes, and on and on and on.

'The very real and present danger lies in greater agendas though. These groups that are attacking Christianity have a deeper and far more sinister reason for their attacks. One reason for these attacks is that Christianity is in direct opposition to the open sinfulness some people want America to embrace. As long as America stands on Judeo-Christian law, groups like sodomites and lesbians will not be free to spread their poison across America. Organizations like NAMBLA (North American Man Boy Love Association) will always have their hands tied from pursuing their perverse lifestyles of seducing children. Political organizations like socialist (they hate Christianity), Feminist (they see Christianity as constrictive), left wing Democrats (Christianity is a burden), and others for political reasons are in support of eliminating Christianity from America. Religious groups that do not embrace Christianity such as the occult (a vastly growing community), Wicca (a very strong witchcraft community), Atheism (disavow God's existence), Satanism (worshippers of Satan), secularist (man is his own deity), Islam (worshippers of Allah; they hate Christianity and refer to us as infidels and dogs), and others too many to list in their total number, feel like they are strong enough together to destroy Christianity in America. Together and separately, these groups fight to chip away at Christian liberty, using liberal left wing sympathetic courts to advance their attacks. These people have a hatred for Christianity that is fueled by Satan himself. Every time a left wing judge who is sympathetic to them gets on the bench, they get stronger.

'The other focus is an idealistic and political desire to

have the world come together in one mind and spirit of working together for what is called the betterment of all of mankind without God. These people see religion as the source of all the world's evil. They blame most wars on religion, and they are right. The problem is that they place true Christianity in this group and nothing could be further from the truth. Perverted Christianity by people who have private agendas and an anti-Semitic mindset use Christianity to further their ends just like they use any convenient vessel to spread their hate. The people who believe this are blind to the truth, and they do not want to see how Christianity has been used by corrupt people. These groups believe man is his own God. John Lennon who was a member of the communist party spoke of this in his song 'Imagine.' This song was written to promote a world without God, heaven or hell. This song could be an anthem for communism, and people embraced the song like it was the greatest thing that ever came along. It received accolades for greatness, and the song was a slap in the face to democracy and Christianity.'

"Go to http://www.theconservative.info/html/war_against_christianity.html for the rest of the story. It is telling the truth and warning all Christians while there is very little time left to do something.

"The following is an excerpt from 'Persecution of Christians Growing in the United States,' by Thomas Horn:

'Tolerance of anti-Christian attitudes in the United States is escalating. Recently, a woman in Houston, Texas was ordered by local police to stop handing out gospel tracts to children who knocked on her

door during Halloween. Officers informed her that such activity is illegal (not true), and that she would be arrested if she continued. In Madison, Wisconsin, the Freedom from Religion Foundation distributes anti-Christian pamphlets to public school children entitled, "We Can Be Good Without God." The entertainment industry and syndicated media increasingly vilify Christians as sewer rats, vultures, and simple-minded social ingrates. The FBI and the Clinton White House brand fundamentalist Christian groups as hate mongers and potential terrorists. The Council of Religious Leaders of Metropolitan Chicago warns that plans by Southern Baptists to hold a convention in the Windy City next year might foment "hate crimes" against minorities, causing some Christians to fear that speaking openly about their religious beliefs will soon be considered a crime. All this, while Christianity itself is often a target of hate-crime violence. We remember the students at Columbine, and the United Methodist minister who was fatally beaten and burned in a remote part of Chattanooga, Tennessee, to name a few of the recent examples of interpersonal violence aimed at believers.' (<http://www.worthynews.com/1710-persecution-of-christians-growing-in-the-united-states>)

"Here is part of an article entitled 'The war on Christians: The global persecution of churchgoers is the unreported catastrophe of our time' by John L. Allen Jr. which gives more evidence of this war.

'In recent days, people around the world have been appalled by images of attacks on churches in Pakistan, where 85 people died when two suicide bombers rushed the Anglican All Saints Church in Peshawar.

war, and in Kenya, where an assault on a Catholic church in Wajir left one dead and two injured.

‘Those atrocities are indeed appalling, but they cannot truly be understood without being seen as small pieces of a much larger narrative. Consider three points about the landscape of anti-Christian persecution today, as shocking as they are generally unknown. According to the International Society for Human Rights, a secular observatory based in Frankfurt, Germany, 80 percent of all acts of religious discrimination in the world today are directed at Christians. Statistically speaking, that makes Christians by far the most persecuted religious body on the planet.’ (<http://www.spectator.co.uk/features/9041841/the-war-on-christians/>)

“Look it up and see for yourselves. The warning signs are and have been flashing brightly to all who will look! Newspapers, radio, and the internet have many warnings and point to the literal war against Christ and his followers. It has been openly declared.

“Even the scriptures foretell of this hatred not only then but always—in every dispensation, especially in the latter-days.

John 15:18-25 (King James Version)

“If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you.

“If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

“Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they

will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.

“But all these things will they do unto you for my name’s sake, because they know not him that sent me.

“If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin.

“He that hateth me hateth my Father also.

“If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father.

“But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.”

“When are the Christian people going to wake up? Guess they prefer to blindly follow their leaders with the strange illusion all they have to do is believe, and they will be saved.

“May God have mercy on our souls.”

Further Insight from the Author:

So many still hang on to the belief that all they have to do is believe there’s a God, do good, and they will be saved—head-in-the-sand syndrome. However small, there is a growing number of believers who can see the trends and are turning to the Lord for answers and direction. He is the only sure and true Guide. We are in a major test of our faith in Christ. Satan will have his way for a season, but the seeming one-sided battle will end with the tables turned. Our job is to grow in faith and become One with Him. If we don’t, we will need God to have mercy on our souls.

Chapter 19

HEARING, OBEYING & THE “STONE”

In 2003 my daughter asked me if we could go for a ride. We drove about forty miles south and then headed back home stopping for lunch along the way. While at lunch I heard the Spirit tell me to get some water, a shovel, and two witnesses and head up the mountain with Denise.

“Denise,” I said, “I just heard that I need to go home, get a bottle of water, a shovel, and two witnesses and head up the mountain with you. What’s that about?”

“I don’t know Dad, but we only need one witness,” was her reply. (I knew that she knew, but I also knew that she had been told not to tell me anything.)

I knew what I had heard but didn’t want to say anything right then, so we headed for home. I told her that the Spirit had said that we needed two witnesses, but she kept saying that we only needed one. We went to a friend’s house and asked if she could go up the mountain with us. She agreed to go, so we told her we’d pick her up in an hour or so.

At our home when I told Dianne I needed to go up the mountain and what I had to take, she asked why, and I said that I didn’t know. Then Denise came in and asked if we could leave right then. Sensing she was quite anxious we left immediately to pick up our friend.

On the way Denise said that I was right about needing two witnesses. So the woman's older daughter became our second witness.

We drove to a place where Moroni had lived on the west side of the valley. It is a pretty place with a natural spring. I parked the car, got the water and shovel, and then asked Denise where we should go. She hiked with us for a short distance to the side of the mountain, and then said, "Here you go. I can't help you anymore."

My thought was, "Wait a minute. You have taken us to the side of a mountain, and all you say is 'here you go?' It would be easier if I were looking for the proverbial needle in a haystack. At least I would know where it is." I believe I voiced this to her and again her response was, "I can't help you." I looked all over the side of this mountain wondering where to go and what to do. "Well," I thought, "at least the two witnesses can see what a fool I am—again." Thinking that I really hadn't heard the Spirit tell me to do this and drag these two people out here, I wondered when Denise was going to start laughing and tell me what a fool I was. She didn't. She just stood there and said again she couldn't help me.

It was then that I remembered the gift I had been given from the Lord the previous year, the compass or "Liahona" that had been placed in my chest by Him. I wondered if that could be of help. I never thought I would need it. Well, I sure did now!

Closing my eyes I looked down into my chest and could see it! I was amazed. I saw the "pointers" pointing a certain direction. I walked that way, while making sure I was looking down at the pointers with my spiritual eyes. It took me a little to my left and into the middle of some scrub oak. They then pointed straight down to the ground.

"I don't know what is here, but it is right below me," I said fully expecting a reply from Denise.

She did reply. "I can't help you."

Then when she declared that she needed to go to the rest room, she and the two ladies took off. I was kind of glad they left, as I didn't want them to see me dig a hole and find only dirt.

About 18 inches down I hit something. A rock I thought. I pulled it out, and it was a rock, but it sure was strange looking. The Spirit told me to wash it off with the water I had brought and then to cast off the darkness that had been attached to it. All of which I did.

It was probably a little over four inches in length and fit nicely in the palm of my hand, as if I was holding a large finger. It had a notch in one end that my thumb nicely fit into. That end was slightly pointed, while the other end was more rounded where the diameter was less than an inch. The most unusual aspect to the stone was that it had "bumps" all over it of varying sizes, so it was not smooth in that regard, but neither was it rough. It looked "manufactured." I wondered how long it had been in the ground.

The Spirit told me fill up the hole, so I did except the last three inches because I wanted to be able to find the place again. Then I headed off to the van where the witnesses were with Denise.

When I got to the van, Denise asked excitedly, "Did you get it!?"

"Yes," I answered.

"Let me see it!" she exclaimed.

I handed the stone over to her. She held it and looked at it for a while not saying much.

"It's a seer stone," I said.

“Yep.”

“Who did it belong to?” I asked.

“You already know,” she replied.

I didn’t say much more. It was strange knowing who had lived there some sixteen hundred years ago, and the thought that it was his was more than I could handle at that moment. We left and drove to the witnesses’ home.

Over the next few months I would show “the stone” as I called it to about a dozen spiritually sighted people. I wanted to know what they saw and what it was for. Several would hold it and put a finger on one of the little bumps, and they’d start seeing other dimensions and worlds. One man, whose veil had dropped while he was in the Mission Training Center, sat there for three hours and described all kinds of things the stone seemed to have stored in it. He described other worlds and peoples, all kinds of things. He asked to keep it overnight so he could keep looking. I told him that wasn’t possible.

Like all the others, another sighted friend said that it indeed was a seer stone, and confirmed its “lineage.” But she told me that it was more than a seer stone; it was “Like the Lord has put you in the cockpit of a F-16 fighter jet and that He is letting you put the key in and out of the ignition.” I didn’t know what to think of that.

As far as being a “seer stone” to me, I saw nothing. My sighted friends did, which seemed to make it worse for me. However, I did find great comfort in carrying it on my person, especially when we did the Ezekiel seminars. It felt like a great protection, that it put some kind of shield around me when I had it in my pocket. I kept it for more than a year.

One day I was chatting on the phone with the sighted man that had wanted to keep it overnight. In the middle of our con-

versation he suddenly said that an Angel from the Lord had just appeared to him. The angel told him to tell me that I was going to have a pass or fail test in the next while. I told him to tell the angel that I didn't like pass or fail tests and that I preferred to be "graded on the curve." He said the angel wasn't smiling and told him to tell me again. He did. I wondered what would happen now in my life; I don't like complications.

Several days later I was told by the Spirit to give the stone to a friend's son. This young man was about sixteen years old and was being beaten up nightly by dark beings. Many times they'd find him in the morning in the corner in the fetal position with a Book of Mormon in his arms. I reminded the Spirit that the son was only 16 and very active and would probably lose the stone.

His mother happened to be talking to my wife outside in the driveway, so I went outside and asked where her son was. I told them that I needed to give the stone to her son. She asked why. I said that I didn't know.

He was at a friend's home about five blocks away from our home. I drove over and knocked on the door. The mother of the home answered, and I asked if our friend's son was there and she said he was. She called him into their living room.

I asked him to hold his hand out as I had something for him. When he held his hand out, I took the stone out of my pocket and started to put it in his hand, but he pulled his hand away.

"I can't take that," he said.

I then looked at the woman, who is spiritually sighted and said, "I know the Lord is here. Will you look at the Lord and witness to David that I am to give him this stone?"

"He (the Lord) is saying yes," she replied. "Why!?"

I told them that I didn't know and asked him to hold out his

hand again. When he did, I placed the stone into his palm. Then I turned and walked out.

About a week later I was on the phone again with the man who had told me I would have a test. I asked him that the next time he saw that angel to ask him if I passed the test. He then said that the “walls of his house disappeared and the angel was there again, but so was all of heaven.” I had no idea what that meant.

“They are all on bended knee,” he said, “grateful for obedience to God.” I apparently had passed the test.

When the sixteen year started sleeping with the stone all of his problems of being bothered by the adversary during the night ended. It was truly a gift from the Lord that both of us enjoyed.

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

“There are many who read the words of scriptures; there are many who hear the voice of Angels; there are a few who hear the voice of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. There are extremely few who hear the voice of God the Father. There are far too few who actually, completely, obey the truth of the scriptures or any voice of light. This is not to say we are to obey the voice of man. We hear others striving to teach us; however, we are to hear the voice of the Lord to know what we are to obey and do. When anyone actually obeys the commands of the Gods of Light, it is cause for rejoicing for there are few mortals on the face of this planet who perform as commanded. Although many try to follow the commandments, the huge majority will perform according to the dictates of society, their leaders (social and religious), or their paradigms. The most disturbing aspect is excessively few people are spiritual. Pretty much all are religious, in some way, while not having the least idea what it is to be spiri-

tual. Those who live a spiritual life hear and obey the voice of their God. That is why, when Doug actually heard and obeyed without trying to change anything to match his paradigm, the angels knelt in gratitude and prayer. It is a rare occurrence.

"That 'stone' is not stone at all; it is a metal alloy. It was man-made. It was dedicated to the Gods of Light for the purpose of protection and guidance. It was also a recording device.

"The 'Seer Stone' was a recording device and doubled as a talisman for the owner. That device carried a vast amount of information. It recorded where the owners traveled, what was done, recorded a huge load of speech, lessons, and general information we have yet to know the existence of.

"The human body is a type of computer with electrical contacts. The spiritually sensitive would be able to "read" what was contained on the ancient device. With it completely cleared of all darkness and recharged with light, it was ready to both protect and teach.

"It is believed Nephi was the original owner of that amazing device. It was passed down to his following generations. Eventually, it was taken by someone (or someones) who worshipped darkness. It became an instrument other than what it was originally intended. The Lord in His tender mercy ensured it was lost and buried to be brought forth in the distant future and returned to what it was made for: use by those of light. Eventually it will be 'discovered' what information and lessons it contained. It can, in a sense, be viewed as a type of sealed book awaiting those to whom the Lord reveals the retrieval and correct use thereof.

"Of course, all the above must be prayed about and each person much know, for themselves, the truth of what has been written. Discernment is a must."

More Understanding:

There was a scientist named Marcel Joseph Vogel who in his early teens studied luminescence and published a research thesis, *"Luminescence in Liquids and Solids and Their Practical Application,"* in 1943. He then created a company that produced many products based on his research. Many are still in use today. He produced the attention-getting fluorescent colors used in labeling and art supplies, from crayons to warning tags for insecticides and slow-moving vehicle decals. He also created the black light inspection kits used by pest control workers and criminal investigators.

In 1957 his company was sold which left him with a large sum of money. At that point Vogel went to work for IBM and continued there until 1984. He has 32 patents and became an expert in not only light and luminescence, but also with phosphors, magnetic coatings, and liquid crystals. He died in 1991, but much of what he said and wrote about still influences the computer and hi-tech industries. I mention these things about Vogel so you will understand that this was no small mind or scientist. He was on the cutting edge of more than a few things.

What is interesting about Vogel is his work with crystals. Almost no one outside of those familiar with his research mentions what he wrote about his crystal experiments. I wonder if they have a problem with his findings and what they might portend. Vogel found out that crystalline structures can store and transfer energy in amazing ways. He also became convinced that crystals have the ability to heal and that they could also project ideas and information across space. From the website dedicated to his work, www.vogelcrystals.net, we read:

"We have seen the transfer of energy of thought into a quartz crystal. We can retain this energy in exactly the same way that we store information on the fer-

ro-magnetic material. Sound imprints on the tape or disc after the magnetic recording head creates a magnetic domain that consists of the information code of the sounds that are passed through the coil.

"Quartz crystals will store the geometric pattern of thought in much the same way. We store patterns in our subtle bodies.

"When we speak of the power of thought, it is true. Thought moves through a field we call etheric space. We must consider matter which has form, that physical object, is now contained by time and space. But, in that matter is a space-less dimension, the inter-atomic spacing. As we can move an electron from its orbital shell, by impinging on a crystal with a photon of radiation which that crystal will absorb, we can cause that electron to shift to its orbital rotation and come back to a ground state. It emits a photon of light we call luminescence. The energy of the mind is focused in space and has the capacity to expand the lattice system in which it is projected and released with intention.

"The beauty of this concept and activity is that this information is locked in and stored with the crystal in much the same manner as one stores a magnetic domain on ferromagnetic surfaces, i.e. recording tape or magnetic recording discs.

"In this way, you can focus your intention on the crystal, you can then extract the data, amplify the pulse, or release it as a projected burst of etheric plasma....With these devices, we can move directly into the pattern of thought...

“Consequently, when we activate the process of visualization in the mind of an individual through the medium of a crystal, one can act on and impinge any cellular grouping in the body that one chooses.

“The statement by Christ, ‘I am the Light of the world,’ has a multifaceted meaning to it in light of the advances in cellular chemistry and critical study of the bioenergetics of the vital forces in the body of an individual...

“When we link to Christ Consciousness, we have a reference vibration or tone which brings all cellular activity into a balanced emission and allows us then to live between two worlds: the world of matter and the world of spirit. The power of the love and the force of the loving are to bring about this light that each cell needs to have: first, the individual consciousness of self, and second, the understanding of group consciousness.

“The force of love coheres this energy and helps to bring an orderly communication between one level of vibration and another. The use of a crystal in this process acts as a transducer for this force and aids in cutting through interference. It can and will hold a thought form.”

Vogel proved his theories or contentions by doing experiments on friends, colleagues, and volunteers. He healed them by sending and receiving information across space while using crystals in the process. He even accessed visual information from ancient artifacts, like crystal skulls.

Today’s technology has proven that crystals can store huge amounts of data. They are calling it 5D storage and have given

this new technology a cool nickname—the Superman Memory Crystal. The scientists say that these quartz crystals can retain the data for up to one million years, which is important because as of now hard drive memory has a relatively short life span. Corporations are backing up their systems every five to ten years. That is a just a little short of one million years.

Does this make you wonder if there are memory crystals from ancient civilizations, such as the crystal skulls they have found, and we just don't know how to access their stored information?

I will share a story that I have not told very often about the "stone" that I dug up. I was with a very gifted and sighted woman one day. All the sudden she said, "John the Baptist is here. He wants you to hold the stone out in the palm of your hand, Doug."

"What for?" I asked.

"I don't know," she responded.

I held the stone out in the palm of my hand. She gave me play-by-play of what he was doing which was "downloading information into the stone." I thought back to my friend who would touch the little bumps on it and receive downloads of other dimensions and histories of this earth. When "John" was done, he left, and I put the stone away.

Chapter 20

“COURTS OF LOVE”?

Before getting into the meat of this chapter I need to discuss several important facts:

From 2003 to 2005 I did twenty seminars about Jesus Christ. They were called the Ezekiel Seminars and lasted all day Friday and Saturday. Each had ten to twelve speakers. Most of those speakers were retired LDS Seminary or Institute teachers, current or former LDS Bishops or Stake Presidents, retired BYU professors, current members of the LDS church, a Baptist minister that taught from the Book of Mormon, a Methodist minister that had spoken at BYU Hawaii and also taught from the Book of Mormon.

The local LDS church leaders based on instructions from the leadership of the Presidency of the Seventy threatened me on numerous occasions that if I didn't quit doing these seminars with these incredible speakers talking about Jesus Christ that they would take away my temple recommend and then excommunicate me.

Three months after doing the last seminar a LDS church court was held and I was disfellowshipped for “apostasy” because I held these seminars about Jesus Christ. Or maybe it was because I held twenty seminars about Jesus Christ without their permission, something I didn't realize I needed.

I have my former Stake President, the one that disfellowshipped me, on a recording apologizing because as he said he “was forced to do

it" by a certain Seventy in the hierarchy of the LDS Church. He said that I had "done nothing wrong and what they had done to me was wrong." He apologized several times on the recording. Right after this I got back into "full fellowship" in order to ordain my youngest son an Elder so he could serve as a missionary for the LDS church.

I hold no ill will towards these men or my church for what they did. I have gotten past that, especially after writing this chapter and gaining the understanding of what does happen when those with Priesthood authority wrongfully use it and seeing what the consequences of doing so are.

The bottom line is my Stake president, according to his own words, knew I was innocent and still went ahead with the church court.

I was talking to a spiritually sighted woman and she was mentioning that she had seen, in the spirit, the church court of a man in her hometown. Several things were fascinating to her, one being that the outcome of the church court was decided before the man ever showed up. But the most amazing thing were the two angels she saw attending the court. They had "flaming swords" drawn from their scabbards while watching the proceedings.

The man was not allowed to present his case, have any witnesses or do much of anything the LDS scriptures say must be included or done in a church disciplinary council. (D&C 102)

As the verdict of excommunication was announced upon this man, this sighted woman saw one of the two angels take his drawn flaming sword and swoosh it over the heads of the men in the room. Then the second angel took his sword and drew it across the body of each of the men, making a straight cut across their chests.

I had no doubt she saw what she mentioned and wondered in my own mind if this was just a metaphor or an actual event. I

made a mental note to ask about this when I got home.

My daughter Denise came over the day after I got home from the trip. I wanted to find out if she had ever looked in the spirit at a church court, specifically my church court. So I was very careful not to mention what my friend had shared with me as I didn't want to influence or taint what she might say.

"Denise," I asked, "did you see what happened spiritually at my church court ten years ago?"

"Yes, you had angels surrounding you."

"What else?"

"Two angels had swords with them," she answered.

I asked her if anything happened with the angels.

"Yes, after they disfellowshipped you, one of them swooshed it above the heads of the other men in the room."

"What did that do?" I asked her.

"It cut off their Priesthood mantel," was her reply.

I knew this was serious. We come to earth with a priesthood mantel and it is spiritually over our heads whether it is activated or not. (It requires God or what you might call the power of heaven to activate a Priesthood mantel). I have had more than a few gifted people ask about or point out the priesthood mantel they see over the heads of different people. To have it cut off would most likely not bode well for that man involved in such a thing. Immediately the thought came to mind of section 121 speaking of Priesthood:

"That they may be conferred upon us, it is true; but when we undertake to cover our sins, or to gratify our pride, our vain ambition, or to exercise control or dominion or compulsion upon the souls of the children of men, in any

degree of unrighteousness, behold, the heavens withdraw themselves; the Spirit of the Lord is grieved; and when it is withdrawn, Amen to the priesthood or the authority of that man.” (D&C 121:37)

Was she describing the withdrawal of heavenly authority to these men and what it means when the Lord’s Spirit is grieved and He declares “Amen” to their priesthood or authority? Interesting questions to ponder.

In any sense, Denise had described what my other sighted friend had seen. But then she continued on.

“The other angel took his sword and put cuts into the men. I went to the temple after they got rid of the penalties, but the Lord has shown them to me and what the angel did to some of the men really looked like what they used to do in the temple,” she continued.

“Then one of the angels put curses on several of the men in the room.”

This really threw me for a loop so to speak. Does God really do that? I knew that the Lord declares curses on His people all over the scriptures, especially upon ancient Israel and in the Book of Mormon. But to hear from a sighted person that is watching the event in these modern times really brought it home for me.

“For behold, in that day that they shall rebel against me, I will curse them with a sore curse, and they shall have no power over thy seed except they shall rebel against me.” (1Nephi 2:23)

“Behold, I set before you this day a blessing and a curse; a blessing, if ye obey the commandments of the Lord your God, which I command you this day; and a curse, if ye will not obey the commandments of the Lord your God, but

turn aside out of the way which I command you this day, to go after other gods, which ye have not known." (Deut. 11:26-28)

"Hearken and hear, O ye my people, saith the Lord and your God, ye whom I delight to bless with the greatest of all blessings, ye that hear me; and ye that hear me not will I curse, that have professed my name, with the heaviest of all cursings." (D&C 41:1, emphasis added)

Since some of this book is about looking at events and having several sighted people take a look at what went on in the spirit world during that event, I decided to take this one even further and called my friend Kitten to ask what the Lord Jesus Christ would show her. She shared the following with me from what He showed her:

"The Lord Jesus Christ was not in attendance at the so called 'court of love.' There were Lords of evil in attendance. Three types of angels did come, of light and darkness. They came to record and to do the will of their respective Lord. They brought with them a book of light. Others brought instruments of darkness. Some did have weapons.

"One angel of light recorded all that occurred. **Others placed curses upon the ones who knew the one on trial was innocent and refused to stand for righteousness.** Some of the dark ones laughed and witnessed the power of the influence of condemnation was complete. A couple put lines or marks upon the ones choosing the way of darkness. This is where their physical problems would start."

I asked her if any actions involved swords.

“Two actions did. One swooshed a sword above the heads of the mortals on the council cutting off their priesthood. The other placed curses upon the men on the council. Unless repentance was initiated, the curses depended upon the knowledge and judgment of the participants. These curses were placed by both the light and dark beings.

“The Warrior of the Lord Jesus Christ, placed the greatest curses, to eventually cause physical death. How was not revealed. A few minutes were given (offered?) to enable any repentance before any judgments of light were instituted.”

Later I would go ask the Father in prayer if these men had fetters and chains that led to hell attached to their ankles, something I really did not want to know but had been told to ask about. I was told they did but to ask for a witness, so I asked my daughter and my friend, Kitten. They both told me “yes, because they knew the accused was innocent.” For men that condemn the innocent the chains of hell are a real thing. Usually there is a fetter attached to the ankle and a chain attached to that. (D&C 138:23, 123:8; 2 Nephi 1:13, 28:22; Alma 12:11, 13:30, 5:9-10, 26:14, 2 Peter 2:4) When a person has a chain attached to them that leads to hell and they transition, the chain is pulled on and they are taken directly down to hell. The deeper into hell they go the more they become like a new born child and don't remember anything about their previous existence. They are given to Satan's generals and become minions, taught how and what to do for their god's bidding. They are also tortured, stabbed, beat up, hit, kicked, humiliated, and so much more that I dare not discuss. Please refer to chapter 18 in my previous book *I See...Awake!* on Denise's NDE when she was 14 years old, which also includes Howard Storm's NDE into hell for ref-

erence as to some of what happens to us if we do not repent and end up in hell, even for a short time.

I was humbled by what the Lord Jesus Christ shared through my daughter and my sighted friend. To say that the Lord does not play around with these things is an understatement. Also humbling was that the Warrior of the Lord Jesus Christ paused to see if any of the men would stand up against an injustice, something they knew was wrong that was being perpetrated. None did. Is this a case where supposed “authority” is power, unlike the Lord Jesus Christ where His power is His authority, but He will not use it in unrighteous dominion or for control?

If we refuse the atonement of our Lord Jesus Christ then is it not required that we make the sacrifice of pain and suffering that He willingly made for us, if we would repent? So it didn’t surprise me that the Warrior of the Lord placed curses “to eventually cause physical death.” Would that suffering and pain be a requirement because of our denial of the atonement? Because we perhaps “swear falsely against (His) servants?”

The other understanding that was quite sobering is what might happen to those that have received Light, know what they are doing is wrong and how that affects them eternally. Can they repent and get back what they have lost? While thinking of these things I read a blog about these very concepts, of men that had received great light, had tremendous experiences and then turned from it, even to the point of condemning those trying to do the Lord’s work.

I am going to include part of that blog about how the LDS church leaders caused some of its own problems in the 1840’s and what the consequences are as described by Joseph Smith:

“The Missouri persecutions would not have happened without betrayal among the leading church

authorities. The editors of the *Times and Seasons* took the extraordinary step of naming some of the leaders responsible for the Missouri outrages in the April 1840 edition.

“These characters were busy in striving to stir up strife and turmoil among the brethren, and urging on mean and vexatious lawsuits; they were also, studiously engaged in circulating false and slanderous reports against the saints, to stir up our enemies to anger against us, that they might again drive us from our homes, and enjoy the spoils together, we are disposed here, to give the names of some of those characters, believing that justice to an injured people, requires it at our hands. They are as follows, viz: Oliver Cowdery, David Whitmore [Whitmer], W. W. Phelps, John Whitmore [Whitmer], and Lyman Johnson.

“Oliver Cowdery and David Whitmer were two of the Three Witnesses to the Book of Mormon who testified they saw the plates, beheld the angel, and heard the voice of God testifying to them.

“John Whitmer was the Church Historian who left and took with him all the church’s history composed to that date.

“Lyman E. Johnson was one of the original Twelve Apostles.

“W. W. Phelps was an assistant-president of the church in Missouri and had been a scribe to Joseph Smith.

“All these men had credibility because of their status as knowledgeable, respected and well informed leaders within the Mormon community. When they turned on Joseph and the church, the Missourians reasonably believed them.

“The mobs who attacked the saints were inspired in large part by the testimony and affidavits signed by former insiders. Their testimony led to the conclusion that the Mormon community was a threat to law abiding citizens. The “Salt Sermon” delivered on July 4, 1838 by Sidney Rigdon threatened a ‘war of extermination’ against the Missourians if they ever troubled the saints again. This phrase was repeated by Governor Boggs in his ‘Extermination Decree’—but ‘extermination’ was coined originally by Sidney Rigdon. The Salt Sermon was widely circulated at the time. The idea of extermination was turned by the former insiders into a threat against all non-Mormons living in Missouri, as if the Mormons intended to become the aggressors.

“The many accusations against Joseph Smith included Oliver Cowdery’s false claim that Joseph was an adulterer. The Missourians believed the Mormons were a menace, were led by hypocrites, and intended to violently overthrow the local communities. These conclusions were based on what the above identified Mormon leaders (and other leaders including church apostles) were claiming. The Missourians thought they were getting the truth from believable sources.

“In the May 1840 edition of the *Times and Seasons* a letter which had been written by Joseph Smith while he was imprisoned in Missouri during the Mormon

War was published which included, in part, the following:

“...saith the Lord. Those who cry transgression, do it because they are the servants of sin, and are the children of disobedience themselves, and swear falsely against my servants, that they may bring them into bondage, and death—

‘...Wo unto all those who drive, and murder, and testify against my people, saith the Lord of hosts, for they shall not escape the damnation of hell...’

“The same letter seems to indict Sidney Rigdon for the intemperate language of his Salt Sermon:

“We would respectfully advise the brethren, to be aware of an aspiring spirit, which has frequently urged men forward to make foul speeches and beget an undue influence in the minds of the saints and bring much sorrow and distress in the church; we would likewise say be aware of pride, for truly hath the wise man said ‘pride goeth before destruction and an haughty spirit before a fall;’ outward appearance is not always a criterion for us to judge our fellow man by, but the lips frequently betray the haughty and overbearing mind, flattery also, is a deadly poison; a frank and open rebuke, provoketh a good man to emulation, and in the hour of trouble he will be your best friend, but rebuke a wicked man and you will soon see manifest, all the corruption of a wicked heart, the poison of asps is under their tongue, and they cast the saints in prison that their deeds be not reprov’d.’

“Although W. W. Phelps and Oliver Cowdery later returned to the church, and Phelps was forgiven by Joseph Smith, the condemnation was not withdrawn by the Lord.” (*Leaders Have Fought God*, July 25, 2015, www.denversnuffer.com)

I sent the above information to my sighted friend and she received permission to view what happened to some of these men mentioned above. It is shared because of the importance of understanding God’s law of cause and effect. Remember that every cause has an effect or consequence. Every effect, or in this case consequence, has its cause. Everything happens according to law; we can’t escape that law. Of course there is always free will or agency involved, but there is no free will to ignore God’s law without consequences. Below is what she shared.

Further Knowledge:

“There is a known, amazingly tall, man who knew those who turned on Joseph Smith Jr., very well. He had the ‘fun’ of using a few for his own pleasure. It is he who advised, those who had the Holy Ghost testified of the truth taught by Joseph such that they knew, without a doubt, what was shown and taught was of Jesus Christ and God the Father. Yet they became full of pride, hate and bitterness such that they would arrange, or participate in, the death of the very ones that had been revered. They had the blood of innocence on their heads and hands. The shedding of innocent blood gives the forces of deepest hell and massive evil, the right to take the souls of the perpetrators down for some fantastic ‘fun and games’ at the expense of the hapless ones who committed such. They died harsh, amazingly, painful deaths causing others to feel there had been some truly severe, unpardonable, sins committed.

“A very few looked upon the brutal, slow, deaths as just punishments and gave thanks knowing why they were so afflicted.

The rest continued bitterly to their death whereupon they were dragged into the depths of hell and became minions of very powerful, exceedingly, evil beings. For the worst offenders, they had been hauled down to hell before the body was actually dead. Life as a minion is excessively brutal causing constant anguish. The torture, they are being put through, cannot be imagined.

“Even though a few of those who brought about Joseph’s and Hyrum’s early deaths repented, they were never able to return to the high spiritual state as previous. They exist in a much lower spiritual sphere, than what they would have, had they stayed true to what they had been taught, shown and knew was of Jesus Christ.

“It is an exceedingly dangerous thing to assume one can escape the horrors of hell by following their leaders with the belief ‘if the leaders are wrong, they will pay,’ leaving the followers safely in the hands of the Savior. That is a wonderful lie of the devil. The followers are, in some ways, even more greatly punished than the leaders. They will continue to be followers of pure evil who will bring about massive amounts of horrors a normal mortal would go insane just to hear of. The leaders are also brutally used and well abused. The worst part is, some of those leaders are more than evil enough, to begin with, and they become leaders of hell with burdens and unbearable punishments, at times, for longer than the followers. It is advisable to follow what the scriptures and the spirit of love guides and steer away from those who profess to be the leaders of any religion.”

Further Understanding:

In the past, trusted leaders have condemned the innocent of being wicked. If we do the same today we will then merit the

wrath of God and become condemned just as they were. God is no respecter of persons; we are all equal before Him.

I reflected on just a few of the men that sat on that “court of love” that mid-July evening and the events that had played out. When I had entered the room and all the pleasantries were over, if such a thing is really possible at such an event, they then said that three of the men in the room would be for me. That is completely wrong as per D&C 102 where it states that *“the accused, in all cases, has a right to one-half of the council, to prevent insult or injustice.”* (vs. 15, emphasis added) I asked about this and they said that this was an easy case so they only had three people for me. That didn’t sit right, but they would not budge. At the end of the court they brought me back in and said, “We are disfellowshipping you for the false doctrine in your two books.” I told them that we had not discussed any books or any doctrine and that I had a right to answer all accusations against me. They answered that I did not. I remember looking at the clock and seeing it was 8:45 p.m. and said, “I have all night brethren. I have a right to answer all charges against me. We haven’t discussed any books or any false doctrine.” Once again they said “no” and the stake president said, “Let’s pray brethren.” Instantly they dropped to their knees and someone began praying; I sat there dumbfounded. After they were done they escorted me out of the room. It was obviously a choreographed event.

“In all cases the accuser and the accused shall have a privilege of speaking for themselves before the council, after the evidences are heard and the councilors who are appointed to speak on the case have finished their remarks. After the evidences are heard, the councilors, accuser and accused have spoken, the president shall give a decision according to the understanding which he shall have of the case, and

call upon the twelve councilors to sanction the same by their vote.” (vs. 18-19)

There was no need to allow the accused (me) to speak since as my stake president told me, which I have on the recording, he was just doing as he had been commanded to do by the General Authority Seventy. No evidences were ever presented or allowed to be presented.

Could this be the reason that angels of the Lord attended and priesthood mantels were cut and also symbolic cuts were made on their persons based on temple covenants they had made? I saw one of these men the other day as he pulled into the local mini-mart and honked. My daughter was with me, and as I asked why he had honked, the girl from the store came out to his truck. She told me, “because he is so ill.” I then told her the past week I had seen one of the other men in church and had inquired about his health. (I didn’t inquire for this chapter, I didn’t know about this chapter then.) He told me that he has been fighting stage-four cancer the past four years, had his back fused and has numerous other ills. I wish these men no ill will. I have prayed for them and still do pray for them. I actually quite like them. But when the Lord declares as stated above, “*and ye that hear me not will I curse, that have professed my name, with the heaviest of all cursings,*” and Joseph Smith states, “*they shall not escape the damnation of hell,*” He is NOT playing games. As mentioned before there are natural laws of cause and effect. If you profess to represent Him, it might be a good idea to know what He requires of you and not deviate from it, even if pressed from a member of the church hierarchy to take agency away or do something you know God would not do. If you do so, evidently the consequences will be mortal and eternal in their nature, not to mention possibly quite severe.

Four years after being disfellowshipped and before getting back in the church I was attending a General Priesthood meet-

ing at my stake center. The Spirit told me to go sit next to a certain man that had sat on the council four years previous. He had been one of the three appointed "to prevent insult or injustice" but had never spoken up. I still considered myself a friend of his; I quite like him. About halfway through the meeting the Spirit told me to pen him a note. It went something close to what follows:

"I have our former stake president on a recording apologizing for disfellowshipping me, saying that what had been done was wrong and that he had been forced to do it by a Seventy. You were one of the three appointed to speak in my behalf. You didn't say a thing. You still have authority to right the wrong that was committed that night. What are you going to do?"

At the time I didn't realize that it states in D&C 102:

"But should the remaining councilors, who have not spoken, or any one of them, after hearing the evidences and pleading impartially, discover an error in the decision of the president, they can manifest it, and the case shall have a rehearing. And if, after careful re-hearing any additional light is shown upon the case, the decision shall be altered accordingly." (vs. 20-21)

I never heard a word from this man. I found out when I saw him at the post office a year or so ago that he developed throat cancer and had lost many pounds. He is unable to work. I will let you figure that one out. I have a hard time going there since I quite like the man.

A little postscript about the person first mentioned at the beginning of this chapter, the one that my sighted friend saw at his church court. It seems that later he was involved in another fellowship. Someone in that fellowship made an inquiry that

he did not like and instantly he banned the other fellow from ever coming back; he became the judge and jury. Once again to quote Joseph Smith from above, *“But rebuke a wicked man and you will soon see manifest, all the corruption of a wicked heart, the poison of asps is under their tongue, and they cast the saints in prison that their deeds be not reprov’d.”* I am sure that Joseph is right, but that is not all that happened as one my sighted friends looked at this event in the Spirit. When this man cast an innocent man out of their community, my sighted friend saw that at that very moment two angels of the Lord Jesus Christ approached him with drawn swords...

You know the rest of the story.

Chapter 21

PORTALS

I received an email from a woman asking if I would be willing to come and bless her home. She was apparently gifted and could see many things there, but neither she nor her husband were able to remove the darkness that was there.

The home had been empty for many years and was a hangout for teenage parties where there was drinking, drugs, and sex going on. She also found out that a woman had stabbed her husband in the chest while arguing in the kitchen, killing him. This is what this nice quiet little family was moving in to. She could see the entities and they were causing problems. They didn't want this little family moving into "their" home.

She had mentioned all of this to her local church leader and he recommended a "High Priest" in their congregation that could come over and cast out the offending entities. The woman asked if I would come the same time as the High Priest. I told her I thought that would be a grand idea as I am always open to learning from other people, especially an older person with apparently much experience in this area. I honestly was excited to learn from him.

I arrived at the appointed time and went in to see the home and meet the people. The High Priest arrived and they chatted with him, explaining what was going on. He suggested we go

upstairs, and so we followed him up the stairs.

Arriving up in the room that was going to be divided into two bedrooms for the children he said that he felt nothing in the house and that he would say a blessing over it. He said a prayer and then declared that all should be well. I was a little dismayed and shocked that it was over that soon with nothing being done for what the little family was about to live with.

As the High Priest descended down the steps the woman asked if I'd stay after he left. I told her that would be fine.

It took over an hour for him to leave. After he left, the woman who is spiritually sighted told me that all the man had accomplished was to stir up the hornet's nest so to speak. The dark entities in the home were not happy campers now.

I looked at her husband and asked permission to do what I could. He gave it willingly. We knelt in the living room and I cast out in the name of Jesus Christ and by His authority which He had given me. Then a blessing was voiced on the home and family.

Immediately after standing up she said that she had watched as a hole opened up in the middle of the floor and the angels came and cast the demons, devils and other nasty things down the hole. Once they were all cast down the hole, the angels closed it up. She was grateful that the home was now clean.

Further Knowledge:

What was seen by my gifted friend:

"Our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, had the angels open a portal to hell. It was swirling counterclockwise. As true priesthood was declared and used, the angels gathered up the demons and devils and threw them into the pit to hell. After they had cleaned up the house they then closed the portal.

“The high priest came in his pride and therefore was not able to accomplish anything. Besides he didn’t have any priesthood anyway. We must realize that all things are done in the name of our Lord and Master Jesus Christ. We are not the healers or the ‘caster-outers.’ He is.

“The negative energy in the home was also taken care of by the angels, per instructions from the blessing.”

Story:

I was asked by a woman that does alternative healing to help her with a situation. The details are not important except to say there was a change in the personality of an older adult child who was asked to leave the home. Then a younger sibling went downstairs to sleep in the same room and within a month she also changed, becoming suicidal and cutting herself. Even her morals changed during that time. A younger brother who is about six years of age has the gift of seeing through the veil and he started talking about all the monsters (dark spirits) in the downstairs, especially the bedroom where his sister now resided. There are three children in the home and all three felt and knew something evil was going on starting with that bedroom area. They ended up sleeping in their parent’s bedroom because of what they had seen, felt and heard.

Before going to the home I knew it would be to mainly educate them on what is going on and how to prevent it. That would mean getting personal with them, how they live and what their beliefs are. From past experience I have come to realize that we bring most things on ourselves, and if we are not willing to change, the problems will come back or never leave. So it was important to see where these people were in regards to Jesus Christ and His gospel, not a religion, but His gospel and their belief in Him or even their lack thereof. I also felt that I needed to fast and pray much before going to their home, so I made sure to do this.

After arriving we chatted a bit. The father came downstairs and I could feel that this was something his wife had instigated and he seemed to be going along to just get along. So I looked at him and said, "You are the steward here. I need your permission before I can do anything. Whatever has happened here is on your shoulders." There were others things said but not necessary to repeat. He just needed understanding that God put that stewardship for protection of the home on his shoulders and he should step up to the plate so to speak. I don't think he cared.

But he gave me his permission to do whatever I felt needed to be done.

The mother took us downstairs to get a feel for the place. In most cases I don't have spiritual "eyesight" to see like my daughter and friends, but I do have the gift of discernment, so in a way I do "see." That is why I walked around the basement, to feel and see what I could. When we went to the bedroom where the problems seem to start from you could feel the evil there even before entering the room. It amazed me that their children could survive in such a place.

I had been told that the bedroom was colder, and indeed it was much colder than the rest of the basement. I walked around and checked the window to see if there were leaks or cracks in it. Nothing there; it was solid. We chatted and the mother mentioned how her daughter was such a great kid until the past month after she moved into this room. Now she was cutting herself and even had become suicidal. She said that her morals had also taken a hit; she didn't mind watching television shows that she never would have watched in the past. All since sleeping in this room.

The mother asked me to do whatever it took to take care of the problem. I asked her and her husband if they were religious

or spiritual. She stated that she went to church some weeks, but the kids went all the time. He said that he never went. I asked him if he believed in Jesus Christ and he said that he did. I told them that sometimes these things are brought about by the activities in the home and in order for it to change it might require a life change. I asked if they had any addictions. They said that they didn't do any drugs or things like that. So I mentioned that there are many addictions, not just drugs. Pornography is something that will always bring in negative entities, to the person and the home.

There are many things that can lower our frequency or light we have within us, not just drugs or pornography. Swearing, drinking alcohol, carousing, telling lewd stories or jokes, anything of a lower nature will affect what can and will enter a home. Do you honestly think that beings of light will hang around if we are doing these kinds of things that are of darkness? These things lower our frequency or light and cause us to go to a lower level. Then negative entities of the same frequency can attach to us or even enter into us.

I am reminded of what Joseph Smith said in *Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith*:

“How vain and trifling have been our spirits, our conferences, our councils, our meetings, our private as well as public conversations—too low, too mean, too vulgar, too condescending for the dignified characters of the called and chosen of God...” (p. 137)

The family asked if we could say a prayer and we did. Then the mom asked if I wanted them to go upstairs while I did whatever I needed to do. It felt like that would be a good idea and told them so. They exited up the stairs.

I went into the room and shut the door. First I prayed again

and shielded myself again, asking for the Lord to be there. I felt Him next to me. He is the healer, the One who commands the dark entities, who then must obey, so all was done in His name. All devils, demons, minions, dark earthbound spirits, dark translated beings were cast out, along with all curses, hexes, devices, etc. I had felt a “portal” there and started to close it when I was told to say “portals” as there were more than one. So they were closed and cut off, sealed shut. Whatever else the Spirit told me to say was then said. Afterward I went upstairs, talked to the family for a while and then headed home.

I received a text message the next day telling me that the youngest one, the six year old that has spiritual sight had gone downstairs and ran back up exclaiming, “They are all gone!” The house was clean.

Further Knowledge:

“Depending on the need and/or the desire for the work that had to be brought about, portals are formed and opened in varying sizes and strengths. The small, rather minor portals can be opened by small children which allows the little seeming bugs or furry ‘friends’ to come through on to the mortal plane. Of course, with the exception of worshipers of Satan and evil, an adult would not view these as any kind of friend to anyone.

“The larger, stronger ones can be brought forth by an adept child or an adult who is in training. These are for the purpose of bringing the larger entities which can and will cause considerable havoc to the unwary. A considerable amount of lesser weapons is often brought with them.

“In all there are 24 various sizes of portals. The smallest ones can be brought forth via simple incantation. To bring forth the medium to larger ones of the greater strength and power, as well as size, require incantations, chants, and specific types of animal sacrifices.

“The creation of larger ones, which are big enough to bring a normal human through, requires prayer, incantations, verbatim chants, and human sacrifice. But these allow the forces of some of the darkest of evil to be brought forth in the form of literal armies of demons and devils armed with weapons, devices, poisons, and protective armor and shielding.

“The greatest one, which can only be opened by a high priest of Satan, is opened within a Temple. A specialized chant voiced by one with the imbued power of great evil (that power is tangible), after the sacrifice of innocence, is able to open a huge portal through which Satan himself is able to walk through. If the priest is actually a high master then it is possible to bring forth the portal without the need of the sacrifice of innocence. However, it is easier with the sacrifice of innocence.

“The portal in the above experience was a medium-large portal through which fair sized evil beings could have access to the mortal plane. As mentioned before, these beings could wreak considerable havoc to the unwary.

“The small to medium-small portals can be reasonably easily closed through the use of simple prayer. The medium-large to large portals require fasting, prayer, and a reasonable life of light and actual faith to disrupt and close such a portal.

“Large portals require not only fasting, prayer and faith but actual power with guidance to disrupt and close. As it is for the bringing forth and opening of a large portal wherein sacrifice is required so it is for the closing of such. The blood of Christ can be used in place of mortal physical innocence. For the 22nd and 23rd level portals to be permanently disrupted and closed, the above must be performed and the addition of intense fire of the structure is a requirement. (And people wonder why the Provo Tabernacle burned.)

“Disruption simply means to reverse the flow of power which

is usually in the form of darkness. That beam of sunlight is a flow of light. That dark movement or line of very dark to black fog is a flow of darkness. The beam of light feels good and you feel warm. The beam of darkness can be disconcerting and quite chilling.

“The largest, 24th, the Portal of Satan, through which he is able to step onto the mortal plane, is formed and opened in a Temple. The opening of a portal of Satan is temporary. The energy and portal is always there, just not open. Only a master priest endowed with power of Satan, normally after the Sacrifice of Innocence, is able to do such. A Grand Master and higher is able to open a Portal of Satan without the need of sacrifice, but it is actually easier after the sacrifice. Satanic power, faith, knowledge, specific enchanting, precise words in a peculiar language, specific tones, and the blood of innocence is normally required. It matters not who built the Temple. All that is mandatory is that the edifice be someone’s dedicated Temple.

“The requirements for the disruption of a Portal of Satan is to first disrupt the flow within the area. Once the portal has been opened there will be constant flow of darkness into the area where it is contained. Given enough time that powerful flow will slowly ebb throughout the entire edifice. At least 14 days of fasting, intense prayer, faith in Christ Jesus, Patriarchal Priesthood, and revelation coupled with the blood of Christ will disrupt the flow, placing a temporary cap on the portal. Then revelation is needed for the precise words mandated to cause a disruption.

“To permanently close a Portal of Satan requires the utter and complete destruction of the edifice. Intense heat of fire, scattering of the debris and burial is required.

“The disruption and closing of the Portal of Satan must be done in the order given above. To skip the disruption and sim-

ply burn and scatter the edifice does nothing. The portal will be left perfectly intact.

“Until a portal can be closed, the best and safest way to escape what a family might be suffering in a home is to leave the property. Pride and fear has no place in such a situation. It is far better to lose the material things than to lose your life and be dragged into hell.

“By truly looking to our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, we are able to keep a considerably higher vibrational living state. That means to look to Him at all times. Something that has been found to be of benefit to assist others to actually ‘look’ to the Savior and during all their activities and even thoughts, ask within themselves what would our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, do in this situation? Or for some, even more simply, ‘What would Jesus do?’ The Christians say it as ‘WWJD?’ This does not mean we will not be tested, from time to time, wherein we may actually confront either someone or groups of evil forces. Nevertheless by keeping ourselves at a higher vibrational rate it just will be much easier to both withstand and pass through the tests and trials.

“Those who have preferences to seek out the ‘fun’ of the world, seek to escape their emotional problems. They seek to escape that which is uncomfortable by smoking, drinking alcoholic beverages, consumption of various types of drugs (illegal and legal), power-plays upon others whereby they seek to control everyone around them, pornography in all its forms including that which is of the mind, greed, lying, the allowance of others to rule over them, refusal to search for truth which is socially unacceptable, etc. There is more that will always keep us held down which enables darkness to influence our minds, hearts and actions. Fear and pride takes a terrible toll on mankind. The lower vibrations, in reality are literally powerful magnets

to the forces of darkness. They cannot help but be attracted to those who are living in a lower state of nature.

“That is the reason the family was counseled to make sure to be Christ-centered, to change any undesirable habits, patterns, or problems. If they didn’t, the portals that were closed would just be opened again and all of their problems with dark entities coming into their home would reappear.”

Another reason for portals:

In the book *Conquering Spiritual Evil* I mentioned the LDS chapel that had been purchased by a family which they were using as a place of residence and also for the father’s business. When the oldest daughter turned sixteen her veil dropped and she began to see all kinds of evil beings coming through portals in different places in the building. Because of the importance in understanding this concept, I am going to quote from chapter 25 of that book entitled, “Pure Evil.”

“I received the following email and with the writer’s permission I will quote parts of it:

“...About eighteen months ago our daughter had some experiences that left her with the ability to see demons and so on. We gave her your books so that she could gain an understanding in what she was seeing as well as to be able to relate to someone who was experiencing what she was experiencing. She has been blessed that we were able to find people that could help her understand what was happening to her...

“The reason I am writing is that we bought an old LDS church to use as our home and we also use the Chapel area for my husband’s business. Anyway, unbeknownst to us when we bought it, it had been used for satanic ritual. Every level of the building had a blood sacrifice done in

it. It has many portals that we can't seem to keep closed. Everything that we do or have tried doesn't last. It has been rededicated so many times that we couldn't begin to count them. We have tried everything that we know or that anyone has suggested. It used to last for a few days and then things would start back in. Lately, it has gotten really bad. Everyone is getting marked up, having devices put on them and scratches that don't heal up unless the priesthood is used. The numbers of demons and unclean spirits taking up residence are innumerable. Anything we do makes it worse for us. I keep having the feeling that it can't be kept clear until we can close the portals. You mentioned some people in your book 'Possibilities' that work with people who need help with demons and unclean spirits. I don't know if they know how to close portals or if we just need to give up and leave. I know as it is now, that we could never sell the building to anyone else. Our daughter is always exhausted living in this house where she is bothered all night long.'

“When I called them, they told me more about what was going on and pled for any help anyone could offer. Within the week I was heading to their home. There is no way that I would consider myself to be someone that could fix their problem, so I called several gifted friends that I knew could offer some advice and help. I also referred to the scriptures to see what they offered.

“And Satan said unto Cain: Swear unto me by thy throat, and if thou tell it thou shalt die; and swear thy brethren by their heads, and by the living God, that they tell it not; for if they tell it, they shall surely die; and this that thy father may not know it; and this day I will deliver thy brother Abel into thine hands. And Satan sware unto Cain that he

would do according to his commands. And all these things were done in secret.’ (Moses 5:29-30)

“Here Cain is being taught satanic doctrines and murder, and he passed it onto his posterity. One of Cain’s posterity said:

“...Hear my voice, ye wives of Lamech, hearken unto my speech; for I have slain a man to my wounding, and a young man to my hurt...For Lamech having entered into a covenant with Satan, after the manner of Cain, wherein he became Master Mahan, master of that great secret which was administered unto Cain by Satan; and Irad, the son of Enoch, having known their secret, began to reveal it unto the sons of Adam. Wherefore Lamech, being angry, slew him, not like unto Cain, his brother, Abel, for the sake of getting gain, but he slew him for the oath’s sake. For, from the days of Cain, there was a secret combination, and their works were in the dark, and they knew every man his brother. Wherefore the Lord cursed Lamech, and his house, and all them that had covenanted with Satan; for they kept not the commandments of God, and it displeased God, and he ministered not unto them, and their works were abominations, and began to spread among all the sons of men. And it was among the sons of men.’ (Moses 5:47-52)

“I knew these things were from Satan through covenants with oaths attached. Their works were “abominations” which would mean the most heinous, dark perversions imaginable. They slew men and ‘a young man’ or children. So we have the introduction of satanic sacrifice during our earliest history.

“Then we have the history of Abraham:

“My fathers, having turned from their righteousness, and from the holy commandments, which the Lord their God had given unto them, unto the worshiping of the gods of

*the heathen, utterly refused to hearken to my voice; for their hearts were set to do evil,...Therefore **they turned their hearts to the sacrifice of heathen in offering up their children unto these dumb idols...**Now, at this time it was the custom of the priest of Pharaoh, the king of Egypt, to offer up upon the altar which was built in the land of Chaldea, for the offering unto these strange gods, men, women and children... **Even the thank-offering of a child did the priest of Pharaoh offer upon the altar which stood by the hill called Potiphar's Hill, at the head of the plain of Olishem.** Now, this priest had offered upon this altar three virgins at one time, who were the daughters of Onitah, one of the royal descent directly from the loins of Ham. **These virgins were offered up because of their virtue;** they would not bow down to worship gods of wood or of stone, therefore they were killed upon this altar, and it was done after the manner of the Egyptians.' (Abraham 1:5-11, emphasis added)*

"The Old Testament also has accounts of nations and even Israel that offered human sacrifice. It has been prevalent in many cultures throughout time. Most are familiar with the Incas and their human sacrifices through Hollywood movies. Hawaiians even sacrificed some of the early explorers and conquerors of their lands. This has been a familiar motif in nearly all societies from ancient time until now. Our government even sacrificed Native Americans by giving them blankets with smallpox all over them in order to eradicate the 'problem.'

"Why do we have the idea that these were ancient barbaric practices done by paganistic people? It's just like the LDS therapists who told my friend when asked how they deal with satanic possession in their practices that, 'They didn't really understand how the mind worked two thousand years ago like

we do today.’ We have this proud idea that we are so much more intellectual and sophisticated than they were anciently, so we would never have these kinds of satanic sacrifices today.

“Adam was far more advanced in his relationship to God than we are today. He walked with Him in the garden and knew Him. Yet Cain immediately introduced pure evil into his posterity who then perpetuated it. We are not immune; we have the same problem today. It has been with this earth through all of our history. Satan is the same today, with the same practices and dark arts. He does not change what has worked for millennia for those of a dark and evil nature.

“On July 19, 1990, Elder Glenn L. Pace, then a counselor in the Presiding Bishopric, sent a memo to the ‘*Strengthening Church Members Committee*’ on the subject of ‘*Ritualistic Child Abuse*.’ This is part of what the memo said:

“[I have] met with sixty victims. That number could be twice or three times as many if I did not discipline myself to only one meeting per week. I have not wanted my involvement with this issue to become a handicap in fulfilling my assigned responsibilities. On the other hand, I felt someone needed to pay the price to obtain an intellectual and spiritual conviction as to the seriousness of this problem within the Church.

“Of the sixty victims with whom I have met, fifty-three are female and seven are male.’

“He goes on to say much more. It is available on the internet if you wish to research it. The really sad comment is that Satanic Ritualistic Abuse and Sacrifice exists with some of the members of our church, as both perpetrators and victims.” (*Conquering Spiritual Evil*, pp. 297-301)

You can read the rest of the story in that book if you haven’t

already; it teaches many concepts about how pure evil operates and how to combat it. As explained, Satanic sacrifices open portals, as this family experienced. (Just a few months ago they moved away from there). We have this problem in all organizations in and out of the LDS church, as do all other churches. It is the same within the different governments and businesses in this world.

In the book I described going there and helping them close the portals temporarily; very temporarily it turned out. Last year I went to this place and talked to the daughter who was then about twenty years old. We had a long chat which I recorded. I knew she had viewed the satanic sacrifices that had taken place in this chapel before it was dedicated as an LDS meeting house. She confirmed that she had seen all of it and talked to the two babies and young woman that had been ritualistically sacrificed as mentioned before. It was a hard interview for her and for me.

Because this old chapel is so unique in nature and has so many portals in it, especially some that can't be closed permanently, I asked a sighted friend for further enlightenment. To say she was surprised by what she was shown would be a huge understatement:

“The building was a training center and school for evil.

“I was taken (in the spirit) to the chapel to observe the general activities performed inside that edifice. Within one of the classrooms we stopped to observe a class with several youths paying rapt attention to their teacher. At first I thought it was a simple, typical, LDS general Sunday School in session. Within moments I realized the ‘lesson’ was nothing that would ever be taught by the Church of Jesus Christ

of Latter-day Saints personnel to the public. The students were being taught how to use and manipulate forces of evil. A small, level 6, portal was actively showing and swirling to the instructor's right, close to the front corner of the classroom. The portal was basically round in shape, approximately 3 feet in diameter, was quite dark with various colored mists, grading from very black to light gray in color. The instructor demonstrated by bringing forth (through the portal) a very dark being in the approximate shape of a humanoid. The thing was about 4 feet tall, quite thin, with dark, reddish eyes, very small nose, thin lipped mouth, contained in a round face. No ears could be seen. It was completely hairless. No covering was discernable nor was there any genitalia. It stood there perfectly still, with eyes staring directly forward. Each of the students, one by one, practiced bringing forth small, various types of beings through the portal.

“Obviously I was completely shielded and well protected by one huge Guardian, with a huge sword in his right hand and his left hand and arm was around my shoulders. Another class was teaching and explaining the necessity for blood sacrifices. One class was teaching young children (5 & 6 yr. olds) how to call for and obtain ‘furry’ animals to play with. There were various classes for children, youths and adults in process. My guardian pointed out it was both a school and training center.

“I returned home with my guardian and asked him more questions. I asked about the portals and how the entire edifice could be cleansed and possibly re-

stored to normal use. He shook his head stating it can never be returned to the general, normal mortal usage. It had been used for much too long by the forces of evil. Sadly, there were quite a number of LDS members who had used it for the forces of evil, therefore the entire building and grounds had been completely defiled. This is the general idea by evil. The only way it can be cleared, if you will, specific chants must be performed, followed by complete, intense, burning of fire and the entire edifice and grounds completely dismantled. This includes any and all foliage. Anything left over is to be removed and scattered in various places. What Doug did was to temporarily close the portals. What the family did was to temporarily close some of the portals but not all of them. It is best absolutely no one live in such an establishment.”

While working on this book I had the opportunity to drive past this old LDS chapel. I wondered what was happening there since this family had moved out. I went to see the family and asked the young sighted daughter what was going on there. She reported that it is covered from top to bottom with all kinds of evil entities, inside and out, with all levels of dark power.

Another story about portals:

A woman called and said that many portals had been placed on her property. She had a family that had lived there with her and had wondered if they had placed the portals there. Kitten would let her know that they had been there longer than the past few years. We had taken the young woman from the above story with us and I heard her and Kitten talk about how “stable” the portals were, indicating “they had been there for some time.” I figured she would be somewhat of an expert on portals since she lived in the old chapel with three very strong

portals that were placed there with sacrifice of innocence. We have since come to understand that if even one strong portal is placed on a property or in a building it can help bring others portals into the immediate area. We would help close many portals on her property. It may have started with just one, or a few, but any mischief that had been done on her property since its/their creation certainly would allow other portals to appear and also would increase the effectiveness and strength of the portals that were already there. This could be any disobedience to God from friends, family, neighbors, church leaders, etc. She said that there were several times when some church leaders had come to her property and weren't very happy. Kitten will relate below some of what she mentioned about the homeowner's former husband. Let me reiterate that if portals are in your home or on your property, any kind of dark or evil practice can bring other portals and also enhance what is already there. The entities coming through will gladly help you in this regard, especially with things many don't consider to be dark, like judgment or condemnation. This not only feeds the entities with energy but also the portals. The portals on this property combined to exponentially increase the potential for mischief over a very wide area and it was important that they were removed.

From Kitten:

"Doug had called about a situation upon someone's property, whereby some extremely evil portals were active, causing considerable consternation for those who lived upon it, and for visitors as well as the domesticated animals and somewhat extended wildlife. As far as it was known there were only five portals. Those portals allow the forces of evil to easily exit the realms of Satan and roam the surface of the earth. This is something I had never faced, personally, with the

intent of addressing them directly for the purpose of disruption and closing. My guardian explained that the reason why it was basically mandatory I attend the closing of those portals was because he had to be there. Naturally, in my nervousness, I pointed out he could go there independent of me. He stated that was correct, nevertheless, there was the necessity I had to be with him to give him the strength and power to more easily deal with each of them. Besides I needed the training whereby I would connect and feed him the extra power. There had to be someone both on the immortal as well as the mortal plane of existence which would completely close and seal up each portal. Doug had the required priesthood and was the second one there with it. Turning to Heavenly Father, I inquired of Him of the truthfulness of the information. Father stated it was necessary that I be there, for my guardian needed stabilizing power coming from within my heart that would enable the far faster work of closing each of the portals. It was vital the portals be closed, for one of them was of great power and could not be closed by normal mortals without considerable sacrifice and expense. The biggest problem was, those who would participate in the closing of such combination of portals would have to know the chants, movements, possess general strength of both mind and body, and the knowledge of what needed to be performed whereby each portal (which had to be addressed individually) could be closed. We had been informed the combined evil portal strength would be cause for a lot of mischief in southern Utah if not attended to.

“So Doug, Alyssa and I headed off for southern Utah.

“When we turned off upon the road which led to the 20-acre farm of the woman we were to visit, Doug asked if either one of us women could point out which one of the surrounding farms seemed to exhibit extra darkness or showed signs of evil portals. Within seconds I was able to spot them and pointed to a particular area exhibiting both darkness and signs of several vortexes. Alyssa verified she was also able to see similar. Following the directions Doug had received upon his cell phone, we arrived at the very place pointed out. The woman (who is owner of the farm) was standing in the yard awaiting our arrival. She immediately moved to the driveway showing her great pleasure for our answering her pleas for assistance. Alyssa and I were slow to exit the vehicle for we were both a little bit fatigued and somewhat wary of the situation. Doug made the introductions between everyone.

“Both Alyssa and I were quite sensitive to the nuances and the general spiritual influence of the darkness upon the property. Everywhere we looked there seemed to be the taint of evil. A number of the farm animals were also exhibiting and showing the taint of evil upon them. The pond, at the front of the home, was dark and rather foreboding...A shudder went through me as I walked over and stood at the edge of the pond, to observe...There was a portal beneath the pond which caused the water to appear much, much, darker to me than what it apparently did to everyone else.

“After a few minutes of chatting outside, we were ushered up into a large log home. It was amazingly

large and well suited for the area. The first entered area was a combination of a front room, dining room and kitchen. The rest of the large home was sectioned into bedrooms, bathrooms, storage, closets, etc. It had a huge, fully finished basement which also contained numerous bedrooms, a couple of storage areas, bathrooms and a work area. All in all, it was a large home for a large family. The homeowner gave a quick history of having lived on the property for 26 years. They had bought the property and had the home built for their large family. After 26 years all of her children are grown and on their own. Basically put, the woman was the only one who was actually living in this large home with much room for her adult children and grandchildren to visit. At the time of our visit, she was the only one there. It was rather disconcerting to view the home which was beautiful indeed, to be filled with so much darkness. There were many heirlooms, many pictures, mirrors, knickknacks, keepsakes, dolls, artificial flowers, books, a vast amount of well-placed objects, all of which had the distinct taint of evil upon them. More especially the dolls, books, and a few other objects were literally possessed of evil spirits. No wonder the woman had experienced so much difficulty within the home. She explained what her husband had done to some of her children which caused the entire area to be filled with the evil and to have the placement of the evil portals. Upon inquiry to Heavenly Father I was informed the man was an evil priest and worshiper of Satan. It was he who ensured those portals were placed upon the property whereby he could gain greater strength to advance in both his way of life and in his worship

of evil. This woman had to be surprisingly strong, in spirit, to withstand the type of evil her ex-husband exhibited and performed upon that property.

“Doug did the main communications with the homeowner, while Alyssa and I strove to avoid any and all spots with contents of evil. The majority of the portals were in the basement. She inquired if she could accompany us throughout the rest of the home for the purpose of observation as the portals were addressed and closed. Doug turned to both Alyssa and me for permission. My guardian quietly stated it would be better she stayed there in the living room and kitchen area. It was withheld she had some darkness upon her which kept her constantly excited and moving which would be an interruption especially for me. She was like a child full of excitement, wonder, and curiosity. Both of us quietly declined. Doug realized this would be the case and therefore, kindly, gently, asked for her to stay where she was for it would be better for all around. She promised to stay in the room. The rest of us moved on to investigate the rest of the upper floor.

“It was impossible to avoid all of the areas of evil. Nevertheless, we were able to avoid each of the portals and touched nothing with a possibility we would contract that which was upon them. This included the hand rails on the stairs leading to the basement. There were streaks of intense darkness upon the railings which we realized had to be avoided. At the bottom of the stairs we turned to the right and were confronted by a portal sitting in the floor at the foot of a beautiful, double bed. Alyssa and I skirted around

the portal to continue with Doug on the tour and investigation of the basement living area which turned out to be quite extensive.

“One of the bedrooms contained the largest and strongest portal which also contained, in the ceiling, a large tube like object leading to the bedroom above. This enabled the extension of the large portal beneath to extend up into the bedroom above. The portal, laid from the floor and part way up the wall, was amazingly large. More than large enough for anyone, or anything, to step into with room to spare. Upon stepping close to the portal, I tried to look down into it. The power emanating from it caused considerable distress and pain. It was, basically, impossible to breathe. It felt as if my chest and stomach were being beaten upon, and/or squeezed. I had to step back, far enough, before the excessive pressure eased. Although it was quite fascinating, it was not the least pretty or inviting for entrance. The emitted energy appeared as jagged black spikes laced with deep reds, various shades of purple, a sickly dark green, a little dark orange and some light to dark gray colors. The general portal interior was roiling and boiling with colors as they were pushed up to be jettisoned past the surface of the floor. The entire portal appeared to be slowly rotating in a counterclockwise direction. Some of the colors shot straight up through the overhead, large (it looked to be about 6 feet in diameter), tube into the room above.

“Not having a clue of what to expect or do, I simply stood and waited, wondering if Doug was going to do something. My guardian promptly took over, in-

structing I was to stay at his back while he took care of the situation. I was to send what love, I was able, into him. I could clearly see him move from behind me and around in front. Naturally, considering the situation, he was in full warrior combat battle armor. He paused long enough that I was able to position a little closer to his back. He stepped forward to the edge of the portal. I kept pace and was relieved he was shielding me from the painful energies of the portal. I was only protected from the most painful effects. Otherwise, I was still well aware of and felt the sensations of the proximity of that hideously, chaotically, swirling, dark portal. Closing my eyes, I completely connected to him. I was able to see the room as if my eyes were wide open.

“It was fascinating to observe my guardian as he reached out with his left hand towards the portal and grabbed hold of the upper left edge, halting the rotation, which seemed to cause a weird disruption of the energetics and the color within the portal. I could not understand the chanted words he spoke in the high speed warrior’s speech, in a strange language. Next, he unsheathed his right-handed sword, did something with it to the portal edge, in and of itself, which caused it to detach from the floor. It appeared to be a simple tap of the sword. I have a hunch that was an anchor point. Suddenly, the sword vanished from his hand and resheathed. Shoving brilliant light down into the portal, he brought his hands together, which seemed to be connected with the portal in some way, causing it to collapse as if it was folded in half, leaving a simple dark line running from halfway up the wall down to our feet on the floor. A couple seconds

later the line disappeared. The sensations from that awful portal vanished. The room was completely cleared and it was easy to breathe again. Taking a nice cleansing breath, I was able to relax. Opening my eyes, I saw Doug smiling at me. He discerned the process was complete and moved on to the next area to be addressed.

“We went from room to room, throughout the basement, where it was discerned where any portals had been placed. None of the portals were of the same size as the first one. None required the use of his sword unhinged from the solid mortal edge. Each one had varying colors and strengths emanating from them. As each portal was addressed for closing, he moved around me. As instructed, I would stand at his back, close my eyes and watch him take care of them. Upon completion, I would open my eyes which seemed to signal everything was complete at that spot. Frankly, the only thing closing my eyes did was allow better concentration on my guardian. Otherwise, I could see everything as if they were open. As each portal was addressed and closed, it felt as if I was losing strength and energy in this silent battle. Part of the problem was I had to resist the tremendous pressure exerted by each portal. There was the added detail the entire home had nuance, residues, and many objects imbued with forces of darkness. There were a number of pictures and pretty much every mirror, possessed of a dark being. This made it more difficult to continue to function without the loss of general mortal life force. At last, all portals contained within the entire basement were closed. With the basement’s portals closed the intense pressure dropped substan-

tially. We went back upstairs, once again avoiding touching anything that was imbued with darkness, to address that which was in the front room area. Strangely, it was not as strong as that which had been addressed and closed in the basement areas.

“As soon as all of the portals, contained within the main home, were closed the homeowner inquired of what yet needed to be done or performed to finish clearing the rest of the home of the darkness. I was told she needed to clean everything which was relayed. Simple washing with soap and water would be sufficient. She asked about the numerous dolls, a number of which are antiques, of the best way to cleanse them. Information was recalled there are professionals who do clean antique items with great success and it would be well if she would look on the Internet or visit a library for that information. She accepted the information without comment that I can recall. In the fatigued state I would question that ‘recall.’

“Being quite fatigued, I was struggling to stand without wavering. It was decided it would be best to remove from out of the home, out into the sunlight, to the picnic tables sitting beside the driveway near the car. As I tried to walk, I staggered. Doug quickly took me by the arm which I thanked him for, and helped me move out to the desired area to rest. Doug and the homeowner continued to chat as we walked out. Glancing at Alyssa, I could see she was also somewhat drained from the experience. Although she did not seem as badly drained as I was, nevertheless she did exhibit symptoms indicative of the experience of

shielding against the, now closed, satanic portals.

“...I was gently reminded that there were other portals, still active upon this farmland belonging to the homeowner, which still had to be addressed.

“The portal at the pond was the next addressed followed by the one at the well. The last was inside the barn in a small shop area. The portal in the barn was actually a twin set; one inside the other. The two rotated in opposite directions. It was rather fascinating watching them moving, in sync, with each other. My guardian was not happy for it allowed the transference of objects and various tools for use of the dark beings. What could be understood is it acted like an elevator for the more delicate tools and instruments. The inner portal was similar to a chamber while the outer portal was the power to move the inside chamber up or down as required. The outer portal did not shoot up as the others did. It simply flowed up to the surface, onto the floor of the building as if a low pressure pump was below causing the flow to ease up and over the edge. The inner portal extended about two feet above the other and was quite steady. It simply rotated without shooting much of anything beyond. Just as the twin portals were being addressed, two human-type evil beings jumped out and attacked my guardian who sliced the first one into a couple of pieces. Before he could do the same with the second, that one, literally, dived back into the portal and vanished below. Reaching out with his left hand to the outside portal and his right hand to the inner portal, my guardian halted the rotations, reversed them, and momentarily, held them in place which disrupted the

flows. The high speed chant was voiced and they appeared to waver. Releasing them, he threw (formed between his hands and shot away) a large ball of brilliant light down into them which caused them to suddenly break apart. Bringing his hands together, the two folded in half until only a line was on the floor which quickly vanished. We walked out of the barn back into the bright sunlit field.

“With all portals closed the entire farm seemed to breathe a sigh of relief. The sun above seemed brighter. There remained the cleaning of the home and all within to be done, which should take several months to accomplish. Taking my time, the car was worked forward with the idea of departing the property. The homeowner asked many questions to which Doug patiently answered.”

Another concept:

Can portals be placed on our body or even in our body? Of course they can. I had a woman call me several years ago and asked for help. It seems that she had a gift of seeing into the future. Now this was not a new thing to me; my daughter and many others can see into the future. When commanded by the Lord they will tell of things, but that doesn't happen that often.

I met a man over the phone once that does have this gift. Only he uses it with the Lord's permission. He is an inventor and will go into the future and find solutions to problems and with permission bring it back to our present "time" as a new invention. Pretty cool.

Well apparently this woman had a serious health issue and used this gift to help herself out. But it seems that she didn't do it properly and opened a portal from hell directly into her body.

I called a sighted friend about this and she confirmed that indeed this woman had improperly used her gift and would have to pay the full price for what had been done.

The advice from my friend is if you are going to play, just make sure you know the rules of the game. Evidently she knew the rules or perhaps she didn't bother finding out what they were and played the game and now had a serious problem. I guess the cancer was gone, but now she had demons and what-not entering directly into her person. No dark portal is good, but I am sure that one directly into your body might be on top of the "not good" list.

Story:

I received a call from a friend asking for help for a family member that had portals in their home and where the wife seemed to have a possession problem. I scheduled a time to visit the family and called Kitten to see if she wanted to come along. She answered that she was supposed to accompany me.

Kitten and I did go out to the home where I was asked to voice a blessing to the father. The mother found out we were coming and took off, not wanting to see us.

From Kitten:

"I had a message sent of a man pleading for help with his wife, home, and children. The home and property were filled with evil portals to hell. Doug sent the message about the situation. Father said I was to go. It was not what was desired at all. However, I bowed to Father's will. The main reason I had to personally be there was so Seth (my guardian) could take care of the large to very big portals.

"It took a while to locate the home. The whole area was rather dark. While hunting for the correct ad-

dress, I looked out over the area and saw wars in the past where the people were filled with blood lust. No matter what side they were on, there was determination to totally annihilate each other.

“When we finally arrived at the correct address, I could see why there was such a plea for help. The home was wrapped in a dark aura. I shuddered with the idea of entering. Seth reminded me, he is there and I am protected. There was no need to fear at all. Having learned the lesson from the Southern Utah farm, I remembered to extend my personal shield out around Seth. He enveloped me, my personal shield and himself within his personal shield. It was a shield that contained another shield with the two of us inside. Basically a doubled shield for two, or as Doug likes to put it: ‘a snuggle shield.’ The place was beautiful, other than the darkness.

“Doug pressed the doorbell button and the man of the house greeted us within seconds. We were shown in. I had walked all of about four feet into the main living room and had to stop. There was a very large portal right in the middle of the living room area. It was quite intense. Doug verified the gentleman was asking for help with clearing the home. The gentleman requested a blessing, also. After the blessing, Doug informed what would be done to clear the home, which would appear totally unremarkable. Seth moved around from behind me and addressed the evil portal asking me to be sure to stay at his back and direct what love I could to him. Of course, all I do is quietly stand, with my eyes closed to better concentrate on Seth. I can see all what is occurring. Actu-

ally, I see the entire room as if my eyes are open. As before, Seth broke the side seals of the portal, closed it and shoved it down with a nice bolt of a light chaser. As soon as the portal was gone, it was much easier to breathe.

“There was a portal in every room of the home, including bathrooms and storage rooms. They were of various sizes. Doug asked if he could take care of the little ones, which was granted. The one thing that came as a huge surprise was the large, black, generating plant (machine that generated energy) parked in the middle of the largest room upstairs. The room appeared to be for a girl. Seth had to beat on the generator for a few moments, breaking it into large chunks. Using both hands on one two-handed sword, he did a good job of hacking it into fair sized pieces. Of course there was a portal right there in the room. The pieces and parts were thrown down into the portal and the portal was closed.

“In the basement, in an office without any windows, a large dark (demon) man was inhabiting the room. I guess he was trying to hide, which did not work in the least. Seth spoke to the demon in his own language. They spoke for a few short minutes. I understood some of what was said, but not all by a long shot. Seth was trying to talk the guy into simply vacating. I believe the way was pointed whereby the demon could leave, via the large portal in the room. There was a choice. What all was discussed I do not know. In the meantime, the demon kept trying to get me to look at him directly, but I refused. Seth warned I was to keep concentrating on only him, which I

carefully did. The demon was moving around and waving at me. Finally, realizing I would not look up at his face, in an effort to cause me to react as desired, he tried to jump around Seth and was about to accost me. Seth was vastly faster, blocking the effort. The two commenced to battle. Seth's swords sliced the demon into sections which were thrown down the nearby portal. The portal was closed and we left the room.

"I totally lost count of how many evil portals were on that entire property. Doug thought it was over two dozen. He had stopped counting after a short while. At the end of it all, the gentleman thanked us, for he could feel a huge difference. He felt a lot better. The dark aura of the property was gone. The area was quite a bit lighter. That generator was causing a lot of problems for the entire valley. A voice said the work we were to do was complete. Looking around the close areas of the valley, it appeared to have lost a load of denizens of the dark kind. Although I was fatigued, it was not as bad as I first thought it would be. A prayer of thanks was sent to the heavens. Of course, all things are for His glory and works."

Further Understanding:

I had learned from the other times closing strong portals that my job was to give energy to the one doing the work. Some may wonder why I didn't do it myself. Well I have no illusion where power comes from and how important experience is. Kitten's guardian does a great job, though it will still wipe you out physically just participating and helping out.

While working through the home I realized there were some smaller portals, so I asked the Lord if I could close those. He

gave me permission which I relayed to Kitten and Seth. I had closed a few portals on my own before but decided to get creative with these. I created a “love bomb” and threw it down each portal where it exploded at the bottom in hell, and they would close up.

The last one was in the garage and it was a small one. I created the love bomb and threw it down the portal. Instantly I realized that the demons on the other end had put up a shield that would block my love bomb. In a Nano second the thought came to dissolve the love bomb into element, have it go through the shield and reassemble on the other side, thereby going down to hell and blowing up at the entrance like the others had done.

I didn't mention any of this to Kitten, it happened too fast to say anything. After I did it she said, “Wow, that was cool.”

“You saw that?” I asked.

She affirmed that she had and asked how I'd thought of that. I gave credit where it was due, to the Lord Jesus Christ. We then left and went home.

Story:

A good friend called and said that she felt a portal had been placed in her garage and asked if I'd come and help. It had apparently been placed there by a former friend of hers that still had some issues with the relationship and had become kind of a stalker.

While driving to the home I focused on the portal and asked the Lord about it. I then asked for permission to have Seth come at the appropriate time and dissolve the portal. He told me that would be fine. I wondered if Kitten would know. I arrived at the home and we chatted for a long while. It seems that huge, and I do mean huge, spiders would come out of the floor where this portal was located.

Having talked to Alyssa, who had a very powerful portal under her bed in the haunted chapel, I knew that all kinds of things can come out of portals. But for some reason, black widow spiders that can fill up the palm of your hand really bugged me.

We went to the garage and I could feel where the portal was at. I put my arms out with the palms facing the portal and asked the Lord Jesus Christ to come. Then I asked for Seth to come and take care of it. I focused on giving him my energy, saying what came to my mind. It was handled quite quickly. We went back into the home and chatted for a while and then I left.

After I got into my car I called Kitten on the phone and asked if her guardian had left her for a few moments.

"Yes, he did," she answered. She also said that she had no idea where he had gone.

I told her about the experience and she said that he hadn't said a word. I suggested she keep better tabs on her guardian from now on. Her guardian is a translated being and I sure enjoy the times that I am able to work with him.

Portals come in all sizes and strengths. As we said, there are 24 levels of them. The smaller ones can be opened by children or adults in a multitude of ways, such as anger or any negative emotion, pornography, abuse, and so much more. The bigger and stronger they are, the more expertise is required to create them. The really nasty ones require sacrifice of innocence, a human baby. All of them need to be closed and will be. If one doesn't know what they are doing it is best to not mess with them, it only stirs up a hornets nest and they will target you.

In chapter 18 I shared an article I read from a man that was once a priest in a Satanic Church and how he had performed over 150 satanic rituals at abortion clinics. They had waited until the babies were 8 months along, then delivered them and

he performed the satanic ritual. And yes, they were delivered alive. We have murdered over 50 million babies in this country. How many hospitals, clinics, and Planned Parenthood locations have satanic portals in them? Because of the horrific nature of what they do in order to secure body parts of the babies to sell, I am sure there are many tens of thousands of satanic portals on this earth in those locations. And I wonder why when the Lord comes He will come with fire.

Chapter 22

KNOW THE TRUTH OF PORTALS

A portal is a two-way interdimensional door opening into several realities, including the astral world; the far reaches of physical, interstellar space; and alternate, parallel universes.

- a. Sizes: 0 (zero) to above level or size 15.
- b. Colors: Many; including beyond normal human vision.
- c. Locations: Too many around the entire planet.
- d. Physically felt and seen: Yes, especially to the spiritually sensitive.
- e. Spiritual: Evil uses a lot; light only when a righteous purpose is served.

What is the purpose of a portal?

“Portals are used for astral travel, connecting with astral or spiritual realm spirits & entities, casting magic & spells, performing rituals and general discovery.”

(http://encyclopedia.creepyhollows.com/article_portals.html)

Portal by Claire “Vati” Watson:

“Ritual of the Portal is an exciting transformational experience and an ancient alchemical activity. It facilitates the alchemical Great Work by opening interdimensional

doorways so that we may communicate and interact with spiritual, interdimensional and extraterrestrial beings of the universe who can pass through the portals. We hope we may be able to see them and we know their presence will enhance our lives, just as our lives will enrich their own. We open the portals so that, with these interdimensional beings as our guides, we may pass through the portals astrally and visit other parts of the universe and other dimensions, thus enlightening our perspective and our understanding of the Great Plan. Elevation to the astral plane is part of passing through the portal, and it is from this platform of awareness that many experiences are possible. We hope to accomplish an alchemy, a fusion with beings of light. Their level of spiritual evolution is beyond our present understanding, but we have the power to join with them, they have a desire to unite with us, and this is in keeping with Divine Law."

"Please take note of the above. There is not a single word mentioning Jesus Christ, God the Father, or anything about Christ. Those of Jesus Christ never "join" or merge with anyone. Only evil does. Any fusion with any being opens all mortals to extreme danger. Those beings may appear as light, to a simple mortal, but are not. Evil beings know how to change their physical (spiritual) frequency enough (for a time) to glow while with others lower in frequency, which the majority of the earth's population is. Agreed, they do carry a definite spiritual power, which any mortal can sense; however, that does not mean they are of Jesus Christ or anything of true light."

Know the truth about portals.

"They are dangerous beyond what you would believe! Small little baby sized portals (zero) are easy to dispatch by simply asking in the name of Jesus Christ to be gone. One to 5 is also

reasonably easy. A heartfelt prayer, in the name of Jesus Christ, will destroy them. Six to 10 requires knowledge and instruments. Invoking the name of Jesus Christ and using a sacred instrument will close and destroy these portals.

“Level 9 and 10: These require at least a 24 hour fast, sincere prayer for protection, and strength and guidance before addressing the known portal location. You **MUST** know, not guess, the mandatory prayer. Call for the Angels of Jesus Christ to attend the event.

“Level 11 and up: Stay away from! These take specialized training, knowledge of how they were formed, why formed, and chants used. Simply plead with the Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, to either attend to them in person (best), or ask Him to send those who have this heavy mission laid upon their shoulders. However, only He can give permission and the authority to close and destroy such portals.

“The last two—no you are not being given the levels—require all of the above, plus intense fire and two other details. Specific authority with a particular priesthood is required. That priesthood is exceptionally rare. Otherwise, guards of evil can and will mentally, emotionally, physically, and (as best able) spiritually destroy the mortals attempting to deal with them. Oh yes, those dumb or prideful enough to attempt to diminish or destroy such portals, without face-to-face permission and charge from the Gods of Light, can and will be dragged into hell!

“The Gods of Light, (Heavenly Father, Jesus Christ, Holy Angels of Christ) **NEVER** ask, nor require, any mortal to set up and open a portal. The heavens know how to produce, if needed, a portal of their own, and it is always of brilliant light. That light is as bright, or brighter, than the noon day sun.

“Only Satan, Lucifer, and all evil require and request a mortal to establish and open a portal. It is purely for evil and dark

purposes whereby they are able to transport themselves, machinery, and anything they can use to overcome mankind in any way possible. Those portals can never produce the intense light of Christ. Any person who mentions or thinks to open a portal is asking for pure evil. If a voice asks or commands a portal be opened, it is evil that is doing everything possible to bring darkness into your life and for it to take command of you and yours. Command any such, in the name of Jesus Christ, to depart followed by a prayer of protection from any further occurrences. If someone (a normal mortal) speaks of or asks for assistance for opening a spiritual portal, inform them of the extreme danger and enlighten where such originates.”

Reiteration:

“Satan, Lucifer, the devil and all evil minions require, command, advertise, and request a portal to be established and opened. They cannot enter the mortal plane without one. With so many being opened for them, it is no wonder the entire planet is now shrouded in darkness.

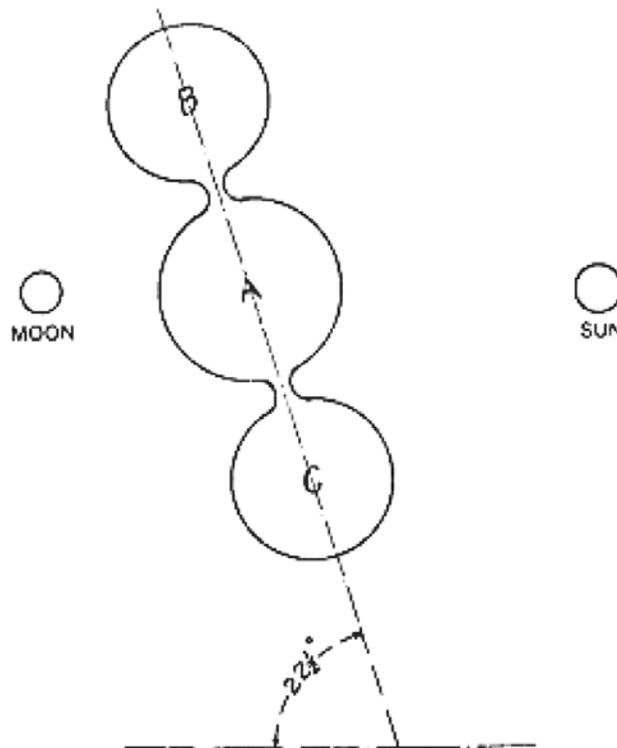
“Heavenly Father (God the Father), our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, and the Holy Angels of Christ NEVER ask for, nor require, any mortal to open a portal.

“We need a LOT more light of Christ. Let’s pray for the Gods of Light to bring Their light back to this planet to dispel the darkness.”

Chapter 23

CELESTIAL MECHANICS

Before my daughter had her stroke, I had studied spiritual material and had questions about what I was learning. One thing that I had wondered about was a picture that Joseph Smith is said to have drawn for Philo Dibble. It looked something like this:



Our earth is "A" in the drawing.

Joseph said this was how our world was positioned/existed before the flood. Why would Joseph want to teach others how the world looked anciently? What else did he want to teach but couldn't because the people/members hadn't accepted what he had tried to teach? Why did he make the comment that members "fly apart like glass" when presented with anything new? Joseph knew what the world was like anciently. He knew how it was created, how the solar system was created, and how it looked. He knew how the sun worked. He wasn't the country bumpkin that many believed him to be; he walked in the heavens, walked with heavenly beings, conversed, and was taught by them. Do you think he knew things he never talked about? Do you wonder if he shared with his close friends things he was unable to share with others?

He was very close to Eliza R. Snow who wrote a poem which was later published in the LDS hymnals from 1856–1912. It was also published in the Millennial Star:

ADDRESS TO EARTH

by Eliza Roxy Snow Smith

Thou, Earth, wast once a glorious sphere
 Of noble magnitude,
 And didst with majesty appear
 Among the worlds of God:

But thy dimensions have been torn
 Asunder, piece by piece
 And each dismember'd fragment borne
 Abroad to distance space.

When Enoch could no longer stay
 Amid corruption here,
 Part of thyself was borne away
 To form another sphere:

That portion where his City stood
 He gain'd by right approv'd;
 And nearer to the throne of God
 His planet upward mov'd.

And when the Lord saw fit to hide
 The "ten lost tribes" away,
 Thou, earth, wast sever'd to provide
 The orb on which they stay.

And thus, from time to time, thy size
 Has been diminished, till
 Thou seemst the law of sacrifice
 Created to fulfil.

The curse of God on man was plac'd;
 That curse thou didst partake,
 And thou has seen by turns disgrac'd
 And honor'd for his sake

The vilest wretches hell will claim,
 Now breathe thy atmosphere;
 The noblest spirits heaven can name,
 Have been embodied here.

Jesus, the Lord, thy surface grac'd;
 He fell a sacrifice!
 And now within thy cold embrace
 The martyr'd Joseph lies!

When Satan's hosts are overcome
 The martyr'd princely race
 Will claim thee their celestial home—
 The royal dwelling place.

**A "restitution" yet must come,
 That will to thee restore,**

By the grand law of worlds, thy sum
Of matter heretofore.

**And thou, O Earth, wilt leave the track
Thou has been doom'd to trace—
The Gods with shouts will bring thee back
To fill thy native place.**

(Eliza R. Snow, *Sacred Hymns and Spiritual Songs for The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints*, SLC, Utah, 1891, 322; first published in *Millennial Star*, 13:17, emphasis added.)

In her poem Eliza Snow seemed to understand what the average Latter-day Saint has no knowledge of. I know her song is not doctrine, but just maybe she learned things privately from Joseph that weren't known. She also wrote a hymn entitled "O My Father" in which she said:

*I had learned to call thee Father, Through thy Spirit from
on high,*

*But until the key of knowledge Was restored, I knew not
why.*

*In the heavens are parents single? No, the thought makes
reason stare!*

Truth is reason, truth eternal Tells me I've a mother there.

Did he share with Eliza the same drawing he shared with Philo Dibble? Do others that are gifted know new and strange things as well?

I asked my daughter once how much of her NDE had she shared? "About three percent to the public and about 5 percent to you," was her reply. WHY?! "Because, most would never accept it," she said. I'm afraid that is a true statement, just ask Joseph. She once gave a talk about her second near-death-ex-

perience when the Lord showed her hell and received a lot of negative push back from people. They were not ready for what she was told to share. No wonder she keeps quiet. We give very little credence to the sighted and tend to dismiss any statements they may make and even make fun of what little they do dare talk about. There have been many conversations I've had with my daughter and Kitten that I wouldn't dare speak of publicly. Once I tried sharing about dinosaurs with a very educated man. He promptly scoffed at me and declared I had no idea what I was talking about and that science had proven when the dinosaurs were here through carbon dating and other scientific methods. Maybe the sighted are wise to keep silent! I know there is much they would like to share but don't dare because of closed minds and hard hearts.

Joseph wanted to share and expressed his frustration with the Saints resistance to new concepts on more than one occasion. This was a man who walked in the heavens and wanted to teach the people, but they didn't want to know. Would Joseph want us to know what it was like in the time of Adam because that is what he was really trying to restore and to help us understand that all of it is coming back? One time after I had lunch with a redeemed man, he made the comment that I really "ought to study the days of Noah." I asked him why? "Just go study the days of Noah," he said. Another time he suggested that I study the "precession of the equinoxes." I asked what that was, and he just told me to go home and study it. I wasn't a dummy; I knew when I was being given a hint and understood that for some reason it was important, so I went home and began studying these concepts/suggestions.

I had read Anthony Larson's prophecy trilogy and knew of David Talbot's electric universe writings and agreed with much of what they had to say though something seemed to be missing. I wasn't sure that everything God did was pure science—well,

science according to how our puny minds might understand things. I became friends with Anthony Larson by spending time with that good man. I sponsored three seminars for him in which several hundred attended. So I had read his books and heard him present day long lectures four times and spent over twenty hours riding with him in a car talking about these things. I loved it all. I highly recommend his writings. Yet when he told me that Moses was told to take off his shoes in front of the burning bush because he needed to “ground himself” otherwise he’d be shocked because of the electrical discharge from off the bush, it felt wrong. You see, he told me it wasn’t the light of God that made a bush look like it was burning; it was an electrical discharge God sent down which he spoke through. At least that is how I understood the explanation.

The problem I had was I knew sighted people that had watched the interchange between Moses and God in vision when they had been taken there to watch the event as it had happened. They all said it appeared that the bush was burning because of the light coming off of God. Then I was sitting in one of Denver Snuffer’s Book of Mormon classes when he brought up the subject. I couldn’t wait to see what he would say since I knew that he was also “sighted.” He said that when the Lord spoke to Moses about taking off his shoes, he wasn’t talking about the ground being holy:

“And he said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground.” (Exodus 3:5)

He said Moses had become holy because 1) the Lord had forgiven him of his sins and 2) he was now in the Lord’s presence, **so wherever Moses stood was holy ground.** I had never considered this, but as Joseph said, “It tasted good.” Though I love what science offers us, I still prefer to see what God says about

things first. His science seems to be at a much higher level than where we operate. We discussed His science or natural laws in our previous book. They are called the seven hermetic principles, or the 7 laws of Hermes. Hermes is the Greek name for Enoch. Hmm, they might be important if they really came from that source, don't you think?

I also take notice of what those that have "gazed into heaven" have to say. In *Preserving the Restoration* Snuffer makes this comment that I highly agree with:

"It is not that we do not know enough, but instead we 'know' too much that is wrong. We cling to false beliefs. If we could gaze into heaven for five minutes, we would understand the learned men writing and preaching about heaven have not gazed into heaven and therefore do not know what they are talking about. The suppositions and wrong ideas taught in God's name are offensive to Him. God will re-order it when He ministers to us. If our hearts are open, broken, and our spirits contrite, then we are ready." (p. 375, emphasis added)

Many have discussed theories about the diagram Joseph drew for Philo Dibble. I preferred to sit back, listen, and ponder. Then I read about Immanuel Velikovsky and his book, *Worlds in Collision*. Many of his ideas seem to be inspired directly from heaven. He had put forth many theories about our planets and space that scientists had laughed at until they sent probes into space, and his theories became facts. One thing he taught was the same thing that Joseph drew for Philo. Immanuel said that if we had a planet above us, we would have shared atmospheres, and we would hear the atmosphere coming down from the planet, which would sound like music—anciently called the music of the Gods. He also said that things would grow huge, people would live to a thousand years, and wounds would heal

quickly. There was a lot more oxygen and nitrogen in the atmosphere back then. I thought it sounded a lot like the Garden of Eden.

That planet above us in the northern hemisphere would give us light. As a result, our planet would never get dark at night time, it would stay twilight all night long. If you wanted dark, you'd have to go into a cave or into a room without windows or some other place to keep the light out. Furthermore, it never rained; the earth was a green house and watered itself.

All of this seemed like a fantasy to me. I asked Denise if she had seen what the world looked like at the time of Adam and Eve. She said that she had, and it was different than ours now. After much talking, I found out these things:

Outside you'd see a planet above us taking up about a third of the sky. We shared atmospheres with it. It never rained, the earth watered itself. Everything grew huge, like the Redwoods in California. Even the humans were large and lived to nearly a thousand years. The earth was larger than it is now. It never got dark. If you got injured, it healed very quickly. It sounded like a garden, too, almost like a Garden of Eden. She sounded like Velikovsky.

In *Preserving the Restoration* Snuffer said, "Ever notice how the pre-earth and the Millennium seem to be alike?" (p. 323) I know I had and still do. But it makes more sense to me now that I understand better how different the world was anciently. It was completely different before the flood.

From *Preserving the Restoration* we read:

"Twice a year in the morning sky, Orion appears on the eastern horizon. That has been true since the beginning of our creation's time. All the ordinances ordained by God are testified to in the heavens, and have remained unchanged from the day He first set them as signs.

(Gen. 1:14) They are so well established, and beyond the ability of man to touch, alter, or destroy, that the only way to have an apostasy from those ordinances is to lose the knowledge written in the heavens. The Lord irrevocably wrote it there. It remains still. Knowledge about it is still part of the promised restoration. These same 'ordinances' were ordained in the creation: 'And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: and let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so.' [He established these signs in order to communicate truths about Himself and the gospel.]

"Abraham 4:14 similarly explains: 'And the Gods organized the lights in the expanse of the heaven, and caused them to divide the day from the night; and organized them to be for signs and for seasons, and for days and for years; And organized them to be for lights in the expanse of the heaven to give light upon the earth; and it was so. And the Gods organized the two great lights, the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night; with the lesser light they set the stars also; And the Gods set them in the expanse of the heavens, to give light upon the earth, and to rule over the day and over the night, and to cause to divide the light from the darkness. And the Gods watched those things which they had ordered until they obeyed. And it came to pass that it was from evening until morning that it was night; and it came to pass that it was from morning until evening that was day; and it was the fourth time.'

"This is not gratuitous language. These signs were created by God with purpose. The ancients were knowledgeable about the heavens and the testimony written in the stars. From the surface of the earth, the sun occupies a place in the firmament exactly the same as the space occupied by the moon. The sun's diameter is 109 times the earth's diameter. The moon is 1/4th the size and less than 1/80th the mass of the earth. From the surface of the earth the sun and moon occupy an identical area in the firmament. Their matching size and location are

both located on the ecliptic, making it possible for both an eclipse of the sun and the moon. This was ordained by God to testify in the heavens about Him and His work. They bear testimony, witnessing to events and relationships.

“The restoration will ultimately include restoring information about the heavenly testimony. D&C 121:26 promises: ‘God shall give unto you knowledge by his Holy Spirit, yea, by the unspeakable gift of the Holy Ghost, that has not been revealed since the world was until now. Which our forefathers have awaited with anxious expectation to be revealed in the last times, which their minds were pointed to by the angels, as held in reserve for the fullness of their glory; A time to come in the which nothing shall be withheld, whether there be one God or many gods, they shall be manifest. All thrones and dominions, principalities and powers, shall be revealed and set forth upon all who have endured valiantly for the gospel of Jesus Christ. And also, if there be bounds set to the heavens or to the seas, or to the dry land, or to the sun, moon, or stars—All the times of their revolutions, all the appointed days, months, and years, and all the days of their days, months, and years, and all their glories, laws, and set times, shall be revealed in the days of the dispensation of the fullness of times—According to that which was ordained in the midst of the Council of the Eternal God of all other gods before this world was, that should be reserved unto finishing and the end thereof, when every man shall enter into his eternal presence and into his immortal rest.’ (D&C 121:27-32)

*“There is body of knowledge God plans to give back to mankind in this dispensation. **It includes a plan to restore things we have hardly considered.**” (pp. 39-41, emphasis added)*

The body of knowledge God will restore includes things we have hardly considered. I wonder what that means. Could he be talking about similar things to what Velikovsky was talking about, and the sighted have seen?

I pulled out the picture that Joseph had drawn for Philo and

showed Denise. She asked who drew it because it looked pretty accurate, but there were planets above and below the earth, which were aligned in a row, like food on a skewer ready for a barbeque. The earth was also enveloped in a canopy of water that kept out many harmful things and kept the temperature pretty much constant.

I asked when this all went away. "When the flood happened," she answered. That was when our solar system went into the alignment we have today. The Lord tells us what will happen in the end times:

"He shall command the great deep, and it shall be driven back into the north countries, and the islands shall become one land. And the land of Jerusalem and the land of Zion shall be turned back into their own place, and the earth shall be like as it was in the days before it was divided."
(D&C 133:23-24)

Sounds like He is returning this earth to the same as the days of Noah before the flood. I wonder if that will be as cataclysmic as the flood was for those on the surface of the earth?

The Precession of the Equinox, which is called "The Great Year," was also a topic of study for me. I learned of about thirty-five ancient societies from all over the world that spoke of this Great Year or heavenly cycle; they understood it, and even made megalithic monuments to study it. They hinted that the Great Year was key to understanding the cosmos. It was also constantly referred to in their folklore and myths. Later, Plato and even Newton wrote about it and how it might be synchronous with world history. All over the earth there are many megaliths and temple ruins that seem to be ideally situated to track the Precession of the Equinox or this cycle of celestial motion. So just what is the Precession of the Equinox that was so important anciently and yet we are not taught in our day?

The earth has several motions. 1) It spins on its axis and gives us a twenty-four period we call night and day. 2) It takes 365 days for the earth to rotate around our sun which gives us our year, and because of its tilted axis we get our four seasons during this yearly cycle. These are the two known and accepted motions of our earth.

The far less known and understood cycle is the Precession of the Equinox. Nearly all scientists agree that it refers to a “wobble” our earth has and it takes anywhere from 24,000 to 26,000 years for our earth to “wobble” once. If you go outside at 10 p.m. and look at the North Pole star (Polaris) and take a picture of the sky, and then do it again at 4 a.m. you will notice that Polaris is in the same spot and the rest of the sky has rotated around it. That is because of the earth’s spin. Our axis points toward Polaris at this moment. Every 72 years our axis moves one degree away from Polaris. In a complete circle there are 360 degrees. 72 years times 360 degrees is 25,920 years for our axis to go completely around the sky and come back to pointing at Polaris again. This means that at the time of Christ there was a different “North Pole” star. Four or five thousand years ago the north pole of the Earth’s spin axis pointed to Thuban, a star in the constellation of Draco. In about 12,000 years from now our North axis will be pointing to a different star near Vega. This is the Precession of the Equinox. It goes backward through the Zodiac.

Our sky is divided up into twelve constellations that are the zodiac signs that this precession travels through. Anciently there were thirteen, which then would take about 2,000 years for the precession to go through each sign which totals the 25,920 years per cycle, give or take a few hundred years. This means that 4,000 years before Jesus Christ was born our axis pointed to a north star in the constellation of Taurus, the Bull. 2,000 years before the birth of Christ the axis entered the constellation of

Aries, the Ram. When our Lord Jesus Christ was born it entered the constellation of Pisces, the Fish. We just entered the Age of Aquarius, the Water Bearer, around the year 2,000 AD.

One of the principles of natural law (which we discussed in the previous volume) states that *“everything corresponds to everything else, meaning that which is above is like that which is below. The macrocosm and the microcosm are reflections of each other.”* The new age movement has termed this *“as above, so below.”* One of the meanings of this in relation to what we are discussing is that wherever the earth’s axis is pointed to in the heavens, that is the energy that is influencing us. Anciently, worship of Taurus the Bull dates back to the Taurine Age (approx. 4139 BC to 1963 BC). What the bull represents would be an enlightening topic for your study. Then we had the age of Aries, the Ram. This would be during the time of Moses and the Prophets. Did God have them sacrifice rams and sheep on the altars of the Temple? At the start of the Piscean age (Fish) our Lord shows up as the “Fisher of men.” Some of his disciples are fishermen. They talk of throwing out the gospel net. That is the energy that was on our earth until just recently. We are now transitioning from the Piscean age to the Aquarian age. (Now that is a very interesting topic to research, too!)

What I am trying to say is that the heavens are fully involved and are an active participant in the evolution of our consciousness. The energy coming down upon us plays an important role in who and what we are. I will not go into it in this book, but our birth time and date are important and does influence what we are. If these things didn’t matter, I don’t think God would pay so much attention to dates.

The Great Year is also divided into cycles, similar to our earthly year which has four seasons: spring, summer, fall, and winter. These four time periods were further divided into shorter

periods that corresponded to the 12 constellations of the zodiac, similar to the year having been divided into twelve months. The ancients determined where they were in the Great Year by determining where the equinox rose relative to the twelve background constellations in the sky. So they had a way of keeping daily time, yearly time, and long cycle time. Each had a beginning and an end, all based on celestial motions.

The ancients also recorded all of this in their myths, legends, and folklore. They talked extensively of the past Golden Age and lamented the coming Dark Age. They called the ages, Golden, Silver, Bronze, and Iron. This knowledge got lost over time so that in our day we hardly know anything about it. Abraham of the Old Testament went to Egypt and taught Pharaoh all about the ancient knowledge of the stars and systems. Would this information of the earth's "wobble" and the "Eras" have been included? If our planetary system started the way Joseph drew for Philo, then how much more information is there? Do we have the whole story yet?

From the amazing book *Lost Star of Myth and Time* by Walter Cruttenden we read this:

"With the knowledge of the third celestial motion of the Earth and its cyclical effect on mankind (which is no less meaningful than the first two motions) we have become separated from a source of great wisdom. Imagine if a farmer knew nothing at all about the nature of spring or winter when he set out to plant his crops; he would have big problems, lots of surprises, and little chance of success or happiness. In the same way, by failing to understand the Precession of the Equinox, its underlying motion and its concomitant influence, we have been forced to adopt incomplete theories of history, with the result that we have lost the most important perspective of all: a sense of where

we came from and where we're going." (p. 35, emphasis added)

Cruttenden further defines the Precession of the Equinox in this manner:

"The Precession of the Equinox, then, is the slow backward movement of the equinox against the background of the constellations of the zodiac.

"Here's an example of how precession time works: At the time of Christ, if we looked up in the eastern sky before sunrise on the day of the spring equinox, we would have seen the constellation Pisces at the spot where the Sun was about to rise. Today, if we look up at the same time we see that the constellation Pisces is receding and Aquarius is coming into view. This is the meaning of the 'dawning of the Age of Aquarius.' It takes about 2000 years for the equinox to move through each constellation. Over a period of about 24,000 years the equinox precesses, or moves backwards, through all twelve constellations of the zodiac, returning to its starting point. This is one cycle of the Precession of the Equinox." (Ibid., p. 36)

Knowledge of this cycle was a basic understanding in ancient times. To those of antiquity, the understanding of the precession was as important as an understanding of the day or the year. It seems to be that to us of this "enlightened age" the precession is an obscure term that only astronomers use. The ancient prophets called it "one eternal round." The ancients understood and talked about this cycle of time in much of their writings. Why do we believe we are the pinnacle of man in our day and age? Man operates in cycles of time; we always have. This earth started out with a Golden Age (from Adam to the flood) and has progressed from that to the Silver Age during the Taurinian

time, to the Bronze Age during the Arinian time, and down to the Iron Age or the Piscean time. We are in the transitional state between the Iron Age and what Daniel termed in his interpretation of King Nebuchadnezzar's dream as the Iron age mixed with Clay. I don't know much about that, but I do know that the transition from one age to another isn't necessarily easy. There seems to be a lot of "birthing pains" associated with each transition—just ask Noah.

Many will probably disagree with this explanation, especially that the time of Adam was a Golden Age. But how long did they live during the time of Adam? They lived many hundreds of years versus our short 72 year average. What was the world really like back then? We have no idea according to what our "science" tells us. This I find interesting because every time there is a new discovery, scientists "backpedal" to re-evaluate their time frame for past historical events. Let's get real! Who built the pyramids with technology we can't copy with our so-called advanced minds and talents? That is just one item of thousands that date back to what would have been the "Golden Age." The ancients wrote of this Golden Age as a time of enlightenment, of abundance, and without the concept of struggle. Man's basic needs were met easily and simply. The earth gave in abundance; there was no famine, sickness, or untimely death. Sounds like a Garden of Eden experience to me, or as Snuffer said, "*Ever notice how the pre-earth and the Millennium seem to be alike?*"

It makes sense that the world's configuration changed at the time of the flood. The interesting part is that in our end-time we have to go back to the way it was then. Buckle up! There may be some kind of a jolt when the planets re-align as they were in the beginning.

Walter Cruttenden, who wrote *Lost Star of Myth and Time*, found that in the past, NASA thought that about ten percent of

the solar systems in our galaxy were binary, meaning they had two suns. With bigger telescopes they have now found that at least eighty percent of the solar systems in our galaxy are binary. Some even have three or four suns. He proposed the theory that our solar system is binary, that we have two suns. I was so excited I called one of my sighted friends and asked him if there were at least two suns in our solar system. He said “Yes.” So I asked if one was a brown dwarf. His comment was: “*The other side calls it ‘veiled.’*” Afterward I brought the subject up with my daughter and friend Kitten. Again the answer was yes.

Could this mean that the Precession really isn’t a wobble? That this precession is caused by the gravitational pull of the other “veiled” sun in our solar system? Interesting possibilities, aren’t they?

Cruttenden made a statement about this possibility:

“We have seen that a number of ancient cultures alluded to another sun or star that ‘drove precession,’ implying that our Sun is part of a binary system... The most succinct statement is from Yuktswar, in his 1894 book *The Holy Science*:

We learn from Oriental astronomy that moons revolve around their planets, and planets with their moons round the Sun; and the Sun with its planets...and their moons, takes some star for its dual and revolves round it in about 24,000 years of our Earth—a celestial phenomenon which causes the backward movement of the equinoctial points around the zodiac.

“Now this implies three things: 1) our Sun is part of a binary star system; 2) the period of revolution or binary orbit is about 24,000 years (close to the current

precession rate); and 3) it is the binary motion that 'causes' the Precession of the Equinox." (Ibid. p. 111)

Currently, we have science telling us of a new 9th planet. They really don't know what it is other than its gravity is affecting the planets in our solar system. Could this be the other star that the ancients wrote about around which our Sun orbits every 25,000 or so years, the Great Year? Could it be true that our earth doesn't really "wobble," but the precession is caused by the gravitational pull of a large brown dwarf or "veiled" sun?

LDS author Lynn M. Hilton, wrote a book called *The Kolob Theorem: A Mormon's View of God's Starry Universe*, which talks about our solar system and galaxy. As always, the reader needs to exercise discernment when reading Brother Hilton's book. But he does use scriptures and quotes from early Brethren to describe many aspects of the universe.

Part of what we taught in our workshops included some of his concepts. The following is from his book explaining the Kolob Theorem.

The Kolob Theorem:

"This Theorem outlines the overall structure of Heavenly Father's creations, with the purpose, nature, and location of each part. It identifies the Milky Way Galaxy as the only creation of our Father. It provides insight into the structure of the hub of our galaxy. The theory identifies the location of the throne of God and the three degrees of glory; it explains where the earth was formed and where it is headed. It provides a mechanism for the establishment of the seats of future deities, as the children of Elohim enter into their exaltation such as Abraham, Isaac and Jacob (D&C 132:37) plus a host to follow. It also explains the possible location of Elohim's fathers', brothers', uncles', and cous-

ins' kingdoms, which must exist somewhere.

*“The basic idea of the Kolob Theorem places the celestial kingdom in the hub of the Milky Way Galaxy; that an intermediate, doughnut-shaped ring surrounding this hub is the location of the terrestrial kingdom; and an outer ring surrounding the terrestrial zone is the location of the teles-
tial kingdom. Our sun and its planets now occupy a position in this third, outer or teles-
tial zone. The earth was created in the celestial kingdom, in the core of the galaxy, and migrated through the terrestrial zone (the Garden of Eden period) perhaps to take up its present position about the sun in the teles-
tial kingdom. Conversely, when earth time is counted no longer, the earth will depart its orbit about the sun and return through the terrestrial zone (the millennial period) then to resume its original place in the celestial kingdom.” (pp. 6-7)*

Isn't it interesting what Joseph said in *Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith* about Terrestrial beings?

*“Many have supposed that the doctrine of translation was a doctrine whereby men were taken immediately into the presence of God, and into an eternal fullness, but this is a mistaken idea. **Their place of habitation is that of the terrestrial order**, and a place prepared for such characters He held in reserve to be ministering angels unto many planets, and who as yet have not entered into so great a fullness as those who are resurrected from the dead.” (p. 170, emphasis added)*

As Joseph stated, there is a terrestrial order or place, the Terrestrial area of our God's kingdom. Those that are translated would reside on planets in that area of our Father's kingdom and come here and elsewhere as “ministering angels.”

The Gods create planets in the Celestial realms, first spiritually and then they call the elements into the spiritual matrix they have created. The new planets actually travel Jacob's ladder as all of us must if we desire redemption and exaltation in our God's Kingdom. One of the major themes of the days of Noah, is our return to what was. This includes the earth going back up the ladder to where she started. As has been explained in previous books, we must "vibrate" at a Terrestrial frequency in order to be on the earth at that time. And this will be especially true when she returns to the Celestial Realms.

Every Galaxy is a kingdom of a God, which means a man and woman because they are one, and He surely can't do anything without Her. That is as it should be.

Further Knowledge:

From Kitten:

"The greatest inhumanity the present age has brought is the deliberate destruction and hiding of the history of the planet we call home. No more are we allowed to seek truth wherever it can be found. Now we are commanded to only hear what the present leaders teach and none others. If we don't, then there are all kinds of labels placed upon those who refuse to be frightened into blindly following those who are none other than minions of pure evil.

"The earth is a true mother who is a living being with thoughts and feelings. We live on her body like so much bacteria. She has sacrificed so much. When she was brought to the present position in the galaxy, there were others with her all in a line. They were stranded together by the loving sharing of their atmospheres. Wow, imagine that! Planets share atmospheres out of love. The alignment was magnetic which kept the entire strand perfectly stable. Scientists want everyone to believe their god who teaches such could never be. Why, to have any planet close

enough to share any atmosphere would bring a terrible disaster causing such a huge catastrophe that nothing could possibly live! Then there is the idea the planets would be destroyed in the process!

“Don’t you dare learn the truth of what caused the separation of the planets due to the intense evil on the planet whereby the magnetic poles were switched, reversing the negative and positive aspects between the planets. (Sounds like what is occurring in our time, now.) They were no longer allowed to share love. They were all pushed away, breaking the bonds of the fantastic, high energy, healing atmospheres. This caused the collapse of what was above to come crashing to the earth in the form of a massive deluge. Mother Earth went into shock and shook violently, causing the fountains below the surface to open and help clean off the hideous bacteria that had so infected everything. Those whom the Gods had kept in safety (Noah and family were only one group) were able to repopulate the loving planet with beneficial bacteria and bring back reasonable stability. Unfortunately, the damage had been done, and the planets had to assume new orbits around the fields of God-given lights. Then there was the detail the planet was rotating quite differently than it is now. The present north ‘pole’ is not what it was before the flood of Noah’s time.

“The Precession of the Equinox is necessary to keep the appointed times before us, to give hope and guidance. The various ‘stars’ were arranged to allow for teaching purposes and keeping truth within our sight. Most people are commanded to never look up for there is nothing out there. Let the scientists inform what they ‘know’ and teach as facts.”

LDS author John Pratt discusses facts, theories, and truth on his website, www.johnpratt.com:

Facts

The word fact can be used several ways, but in general in science, “facts” refer to the observations. They are best when they are repeatable observations under controlled conditions, such as, “It is a fact that the speed of light is constant in a vacuum.” This is the part of science which will be the same a century from now, unless more precise measurements show otherwise.

Theories

The theories are the explanations proposed in step two of the scientific method. Usually the word “theory” is reserved for more than a first attempt, which might be called a “hypothesis.” A theory usually has already survived several falsification attempts, and is pretty well accepted. However, I’ll use the word theory to mean any explanation of observations.

Thus, by separating facts from theories, I mean distinguishing between observations and explanations. When you hear the news, “The Dow Jones took a plunge today because of fears about the Asian crisis,” is that fact or theory? It was half and half. The fact is that the market went down: that is an observation which was measured. But who knows what drives the market? The matter-of-fact statement that it was caused by such fears could be anything from one reporter’s speculation to a general consensus of market analysts. In any case, it remains only a theory. No one will separate the facts from theories for you; the trend is to present everything as truth.

Truth

Let's take just a moment to talk about truth. If science can never prove a theory "true," then truth really has no place at all in science. By "truth" I mean what is "really" going on. Truth has to do with ultimate causes, which are nearly always extremely elusive and beyond the realm of science. Science deals with theories, usually mathematical, which predict outcomes of experiments. For example, if we drop a rock off a cliff, the law of gravity combined with theories of air resistance and other forces can be used to calculate just how long it will take to hit the ground, and how fast it will go, etc. But science does not answer the question of just exactly what gravity is, or why things fall. It just states that given certain conditions, they will fall. In general, science answers questions like "how," "when," "where", but never "why" in the ultimate sense.

As an example of the interplay of the three concepts of observations, theories and truth, consider the courtroom. The observations may be that a man was seen shooting a gun and that the person hit by the bullet died. The theory may be that it was cold-blooded murder, but the truth may be that it was self-defense. Truth tends to be invisible and hidden, such as someone's motives, whereas observations are usually visible. Courts are very interested in truth, where the motive (the ultimate cause) for actions is given considerable weight. The distinction between first-degree and second-degree murder is based on intent. Motives are not as yet observable in science, and hence are beyond science.

Try Replacing the Word “Fact”

The word “fact” has several meanings, which can be very confusing. In popular useage it can mean either “observation,” “theory,” or “truth.” As an example of each, one can say, “It is a fact that every time I have dropped this ball, it fell to the ground.” That is what has been observed so far, and the word “fact” can be replaced with “observation.” One can also say, “It is a fact that every time I have dropped this ball, gravity pulled it to the ground.” Even though this statement appears very similar to the first, “gravity” really refers to a theory proposed to explain why the ball is observed to fall. Finally, if one so thoroughly believes that the theory of gravity is really “true,” he could replace “a fact” with “true,” which would take the meaning beyond science into the realm of his personal convictions.

This confusion can often be avoided by always replacing the word “fact” with “observation,” “theory” or “truth,” whichever seems to convey the intended meaning best. Remember that if the meaning is “observation,” then it is as fallible as the observer. If it is a “theory,” then it also could be disproven someday. If it is claimed to be “truth,” then it is a statement of the personal conviction of the speaker, which is outside the domain of science.

Paul asks an interesting question to the Galatians:

“Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?” (Gal. 4:16)

The following quotes were found on www.click.com and have citations on each quote. They were reproduced on the “Click”

site by permission. They show what scientists are beginning to see/notice/observe.

Scientists Admit: Evolution Not Supported By Facts!

Issue Date: January/February 1987

“Evolutionism is a fairy tale for grown-ups. This theory has helped nothing in the progress of science. It is useless,” says Professor Louis Bouroune, former President of the Biological Society of Strasbourg and Director of the Strasbourg Zoological Museum, later Director of Research at the French National Centre of Scientific Research, as quoted in *The Advocate*, March 8, 1984.

On many campuses, any professor who admits having doubts about the “factual” nature of evolution would be laughed off the campus (and out of his job). But today, more and more courageous scientists are publicly admitting what they have known privately for years: believing in evolution requires an act of blind faith.

Does evolution square with the facts? Here are the statements of several scientific leaders as found in *The Quote Book*, published by Creation Science Foundation Ltd.

Evolutionists Great Con Men

“Scientists who go about teaching that evolution is a fact of life are great con-men, and the story they are telling may be the greatest hoax ever. In explaining evolution we do not have one iota of fact.” (Dr. T.N. Tahmisian. Atomic Energy Commission, *The Fresno Bee*, August 20, 1959.)

“...most people assume that fossils provide a very important part of the general argument made in favor of Darwinian interpretation of the history of life. Unfortunately, this is not strictly true.” (Dr. David Raup, Curator, Field Museum of Natural History, Chicago. Quoted from “Conflicts between Darwin and paleontology,” *Field Museum of Natural History Bulletin*, Vol. 50 (1), 1979.)

Do Fossils Prove It?

“...I fully agree with your comments on the lack of direct illustration of evolutionary transition in my book. If I knew of any, fossil or living, I would certainly have included them...Yet Gould and the American Museum people are hard to contradict when they say there are no transitional fossils...I will lay it on the line—there is not one such fossil for which one could make a watertight argument.” (Personal letter from Dr. Colin Patterson, Senior Paleontologist at the British Museum of Natural History in London, to L. Sunderland.)

“Despite the bright promise that paleontology provides a means of ‘seeing’ evolution, it has presented some nasty difficulties for evolutionists, the most notorious of which is the presence of ‘gaps’ in the fossil record. Evolution requires intermediate forms between species and paleontology does not provide them...” (David B. Kitts, Ph.D. -- Zoology, Head Curator, Department of Geology, Stoval Museum, and well-known evolutionary paleontologist. *Evolution*, Vol. 28, Sept. 1974.)

But What About Those Bones?

“...not being a paleontologist, I don't want to pour too much scorn on paleontologists, but if you were to spend your life picking up bones and finding little fragments of head and little fragments of jaw, there's a very strong desire to exaggerate the importance of those fragments...” (Dr. Greg Kirby in an address given at a meeting of the Biology Teachers Association of South Australia in 1976. Dr. Kirby was the Senior Lecturer in Population Biology at Flinders University and was giving the case for evolution.)

“A five million year old piece of bone that was thought to be the collarbone of a humanlike creature is actually part of a dolphin rib...The problem with a lot of anthropologists is that they want so much to find a hominid that any scrap of bone becomes a hominid bone.” (Dr. Tim White, anthropologist, University of California, Berkeley, quoted in New Scientist, April 28, 1983.)

But the World Is So Old...Isn't It?

“All the above (radiometric) methods for dating the age of the earth, its various strata, and its fossils are questionable, because the rates are likely to have fluctuated widely over earth history...It is obvious that radiometric techniques may not be the absolute dating methods that they are claimed to be. Age estimates on a given geological stratum by different radiometric methods are often quite different (sometimes by hundreds of millions of years). There is no absolutely reliable long-term radiological 'clock.' The uncertainties inherent in radiometric dating are dis-

turbing to geologist and evolutionists..." (W.D. Stansfield, Ph.D., Instructor of Biology, California Polytech State University, *The Science of Evolution*, Macmillan, 1987.)

Carbon-14 Will Tell Us...Won't It?

"When the blood of a seal, freshly killed at McMurdo Sound in the Antarctic was tested by carbon-14, it showed the seal had died 1,300 years ago." (From W. Dort Jr., Ph.D. -- Geology, Professor, University of Kansas, quoted in *Antarctic Journal of the United States*, 1971.)

"The hair on the Chekurovka mammoth was found to have a carbon-14 age of 26,000 years but the peaty soil in which it was preserved was found to have a carbon-14 dating of only 5,600 years." (*Radiocarbon Journal*, Vol. 8, 1966.)

When Did Dinosaurs Really Live?

The existence of dinosaurs long before man came along has been almost a basic tenet of faith for the evolutionist. But what if the footprints of both man and dinosaur were found together?

In the *Journal of Geological Education*, Vol. 31, 1983, David H Milne and Steven D Schafersman tell us "Such an occurrence, if verified, would seriously disrupt conventional interpretations of biological and geological history and would support the doctrine of creationism and catastrophism."

Well gentlemen, not only have both man and dinosaur prints been found together in Mexico, New

Mexico, Arizona, Missouri, Kentucky and Illinois, but other U.S. locations as well.

Why Do They Do It?

Easy-to-understand answers against evolution. “One is forced to conclude that many scientists and technologists pay lip-service to Darwinian theory only because it supposedly excludes a Creator.” (Dr. Michael Walker, Senior Lecturer in Anthropology, Sydney University, quoted in Quadrant, October, 1982.)

Since the facts do not prove evolution, since the fossil record does not show any transition from one species to another, since “scientific” dating methods have been proven unreliable, let us remember that for those who desperately desire to reject God, evolution is a religion of last resort. If there is no Creator, there can be no sin, and no need of a Saviour.

A. Lunn summed up the curious faith of the evolutionist as follows: “Faith is the substance of fossils hoped for, the evidence of links unseen.” (The Collapse of Evolution, by Dr. Scott Huse.) Those supposedly omniscient scientists who still teach evolution as though it were fact are finally seen for what they are...frail men willing to believe a lie because it helps them avoid the truth.”

In summary, quite a few people have been taken and shown what Mother Earth appeared as in the not so distant past. Science has hard evidence there have been major changes to the planet as a whole. It does not appear now as it was in the beginning which includes its size. There is strong evidence the poles

have switched more than once. The weather has been disrupted each time. There is no evidence of supposed evolution to cause these events.

Perhaps the scriptures have more actual facts and truth than we are being allowed to believe. Of course the present Bibles no longer contain what was recorded in the beginning of the compilations. Nevertheless, there is enough actual truth to give reasonable guidance. Then one may ask God for further enlightenment. Then greater knowledge and truth can be added. It is up to each of us to ask, learn, and know what the Gods of Light desire to teach pertaining to the history of the planet we live upon, which in turn teaches much about ourselves.

AFTERTHOUGHTS

For four years we held what we affectionately and jokingly called Jedi workshops. Though some did try what was taught, what amazed us was how many of those that attended never really did much that we discussed and taught. Some would try some of the things, get discouraged quickly and quit trying. Many of those things have been written about in these two volumes.

At the first workshop Kitten introduced a way to learn to use energy. She had a soda pop bottle with a cork in it. She had placed a sewing needle in the cork and had folded up a four inch square of paper into what we called an umbrella, which was then placed on the needle. The idea was to use energy to get the paper to spin. I tried it, and she cracked up laughing.

“Your energy goes straight at it, and when it gets there goes up and over it,” she said. I knew I was creative but not that good. It took much practice to get the paper to move, but it finally did. We discovered later that many could not or would not do it.

We seemed to have a little better success with “cloud busting.” Those that actually tried it experienced some success.

A while ago I asked a good friend if he had ever moved the “umbrella” on the bottle. He told me he had tried for 15 min-

utes and gave up; it never moved.

“That’s it?” I asked. “Fifteen minutes?”

“Yes,” came the reply.

I suggested that he try to meditate, pray, read the Book of Mormon, listen to Solfeggio frequencies, run energy every morning and then try it. He did on a consistent basis. Guess what? He can now make it spin on the bottle, either direction at will. I am still trying to get him to dissolve clouds though.

Isn’t it amazing what practice does?

The Gods of Light use energy. The Savior Jesus Christ uses energy. We are made of energy or light, which is the same thing. If I could have any desire, it would be that a group of people would practice and learn these things. Then higher level ideas could be taught. We’re going to need to vibrate at a Terrestrial frequency anyway, unless we enjoy heat, real hot, burning heat. That is coming. Are we ready? Very few are.

The other idea that we hoped people would grasp from the workshops is to take an idea and run with it. There were many concepts that we just touched upon, as we have done in these two books. One man in Arizona did just that with the concept of opening the third eye. He studied and wrote a great paper on it that he forwarded to me. We handed it out at several workshops. It was awesome! Another woman in Arizona researched the Solfeggio frequencies and uses them in her healing or energy practice with great success. What is it about Arizona? Tragically, many will do nothing. They come to a workshop, read a book, and that’s it, end of story.

My earnest desire is for you to take concepts and go to the Lord Jesus Christ and let Him lead you to places to expand on what you learned. Ask Him. He will answer and lead you. I was told to do a workshop on pyramids. I studied all I could find

and soon found that the Russians had done decades of research and experiments on pyramids. They had built huge ones that are 144 ft. tall and found out all of the incredible things they can do. I shared those things in the workshop. We all should have several in our homes. Come on, get weird and put one up!

I read in some research that pyramids helped bring up people's frequency. One Russian scientist talked about how they did that in the Egyptian pyramids and how it also allowed the Gods or angels to come down and not harm the humans. Now that was an intriguing statement for a scientist to make. But I then correlated it in my mind with something that Kitten had said some eight or nine years ago. I went to my two redeemed friends, along with Denise and asked them how many pyramids were in the city of Enoch and why were they there. The responses were just what I'd been told by the Spirit they would be. Yes, they do have them there, and they are for several specific reasons, which we discussed.

That is what we should do with all the concepts the Lord wants us to study. You say that you don't have an "oracle" to ask? Yes, you do. He is called the Lord Jesus Christ or you can even ask your Father. They will answer all of us. Become a child—ask, ask, and ask again. Weary Them. Raise your light to the point that you entertain angels and ask them your questions. Keep going until He comes and redeems you. Then He will introduce you to the Father, and they will then abide with you. What could be better than that?

This book was a pleasure to write. I was amazed at what the Lord wanted shared, and I was actually quite apprehensive about some of it. I know Kitten was—extremely so. Denise seems to flow with it more than us "older" folks. Some of the "Further Knowledge" was simply incredible. What was shared was more than I had hoped for. For that reason I am excited to

share this book and hope as in all things, you will take everything to the Lord for verification. We are all human and very fallible, just like the Pope and the Prophet.

I am grateful to have been a part of this work. I love being able to talk about Christ and His work. Even though my viewpoint might be from a very different angle than some, we all must focus on Him, His atonement, and the gospel because we have much in common. May God bless you all.

And we talk of Christ, we rejoice in Christ, we preach of Christ, we prophesy of Christ, and we write according to our prophecies, that our children may know to what source they may look for a remission of their sins. (2 Nephi 25:26)

That's all it is about.

REFERENCES

Bruce, R. (2007). *Energy Work: The Secret of Healing and Spiritual Development*. Charlottesville, VA: Hampton Roads.

Cruttenden, W. (2006). *Lost Star of Myth and Time*. Pittsburgh, PA: St. Lynn's Press

Davis, A. (2008). *Hell Minus One: My Story of Deliverance From Satanic Ritual Abuse and My Journey to Freedom*. Tooele, UT: Transcript Bulletin Publishing.

Daniels, A. (1992). *Paperdolls: Healing from Sexual Abuse in Mormon Neighborhoods*. Salt Lake City, UT: Palingenesia Press.

DeCamp, J. (1992). *The Franklin Cover-Up: Child Abuse, Satanism, and Murder in Nebraska*. AWT, Inc.

Flescher, A. (2013). *Moral Evil*. Baltimore, MD: Georgetown University Press.

Gerber, R. (2001). *Vibrational Medicine*. Rochester, VT: Bear & Company.

Hanshaw, J. (2014). *Weird Stuff: Operation Culture Creation*. Greenville, SC: Blue Fly Press.

Hanshaw, J. (2015). *Weird Stuff: Hollywood Mind Control*. Greenville, SC: Blue Fly Press.

Hilton, L. (2006). *The Kolob Theorem: A Mormon's View of God's Starry Universe*. Orem, UT: Granite Publishing.

Lemesurier, P. (1996). *The Great Pyramid Decoded*. Rockport, MA: Element Books.

Mails, T. E. (1991). *Fools Crow: Wisdom and Power*. Tulsa, OK: Council Oaks Books.

Mendenhall, D. (2011). *Conquering Spiritual Evil*. Mt. Pleasant, UT: Publishing Hope.

Mendenhall, D. (2006). *In His Arms: Experiences with the Other Side*. Mt. Pleasant, UT: Publishing Hope.

Mendenhall, D. (2015). *I See...Awake!* Mt. Pleasant, UT: Publishing Hope.

Mendenhall, D. (2001). *My Peace I Give Unto You*. Salt Lake City, UT: Publishing Hope.

O'Brien, C. (2005). *Trance-Formation of America*. Guntersville, AL: Reality Marketing.

Smith, J. (1985). *Lectures on Faith*. Salt Lake City, UT: Deseret Book.

Smith, J. (1976). *Teachings of the Prophet Joseph Smith*. Salt Lake City, UT: Deseret Book.

Snuffer, D. (2015). *Preserving the Restoration*. Salt Lake City, UT: Millcreek Press.

Snuffer, D. (2008). *The Second Comforter: Conversing with the Lord Through the Veil*. Salt Lake City, UT: Millcreek Press.

Wilcock, D. (2011). *The Source Field Investigations: The Hidden Science and Lost Civilizations Behind the 2012 Prophecies*. New York, NY: Dutton.

Wilcock, D. (2013). *The Synchronicity Key: The Hidden Intelligence Guiding the Universe and You*. New York, NY: Dutton

